

D-7.

4 Vols.

15/-

**CATHERINE S. MONRO.**



583/4

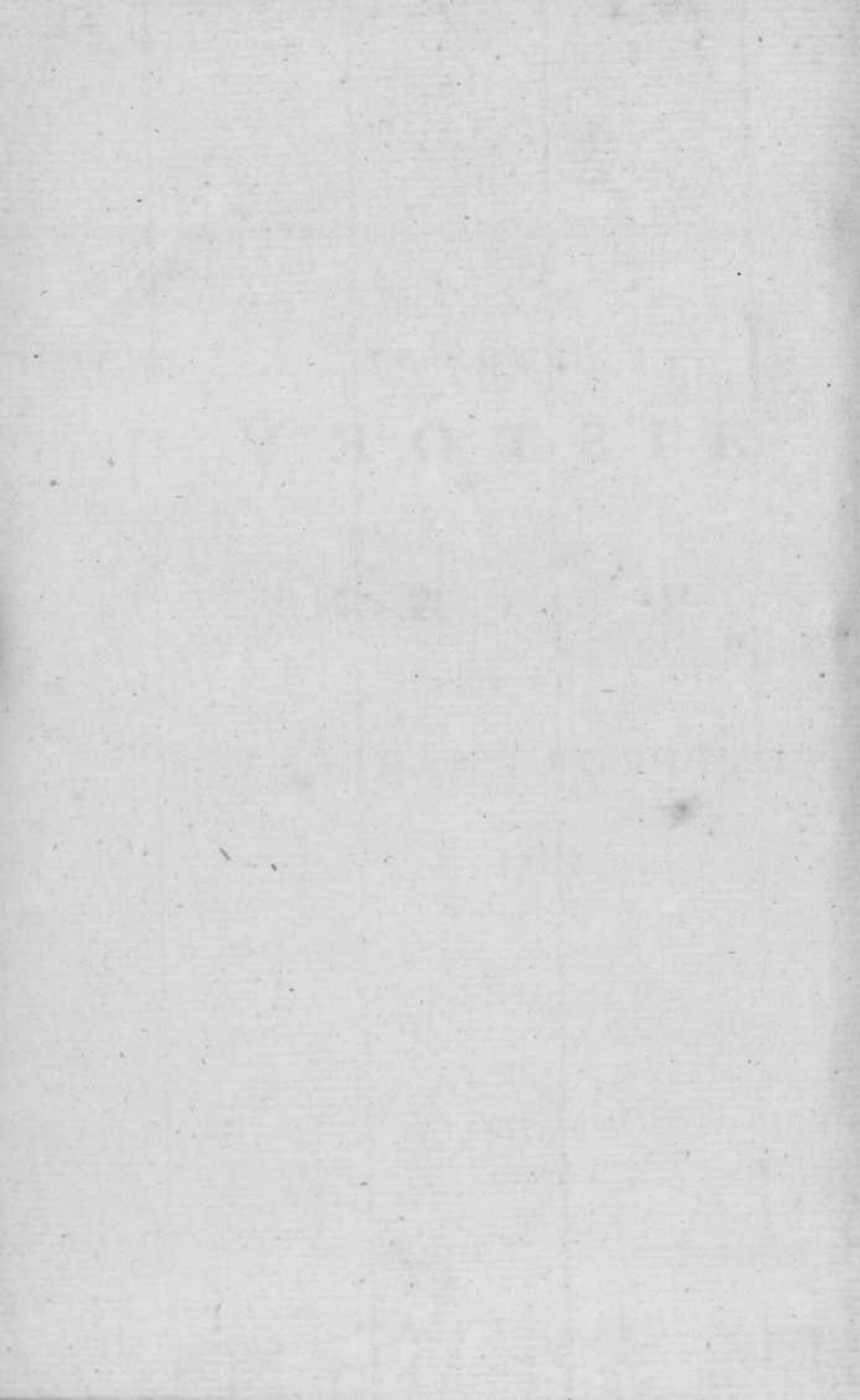
R 04/04/2006



# HISTORY

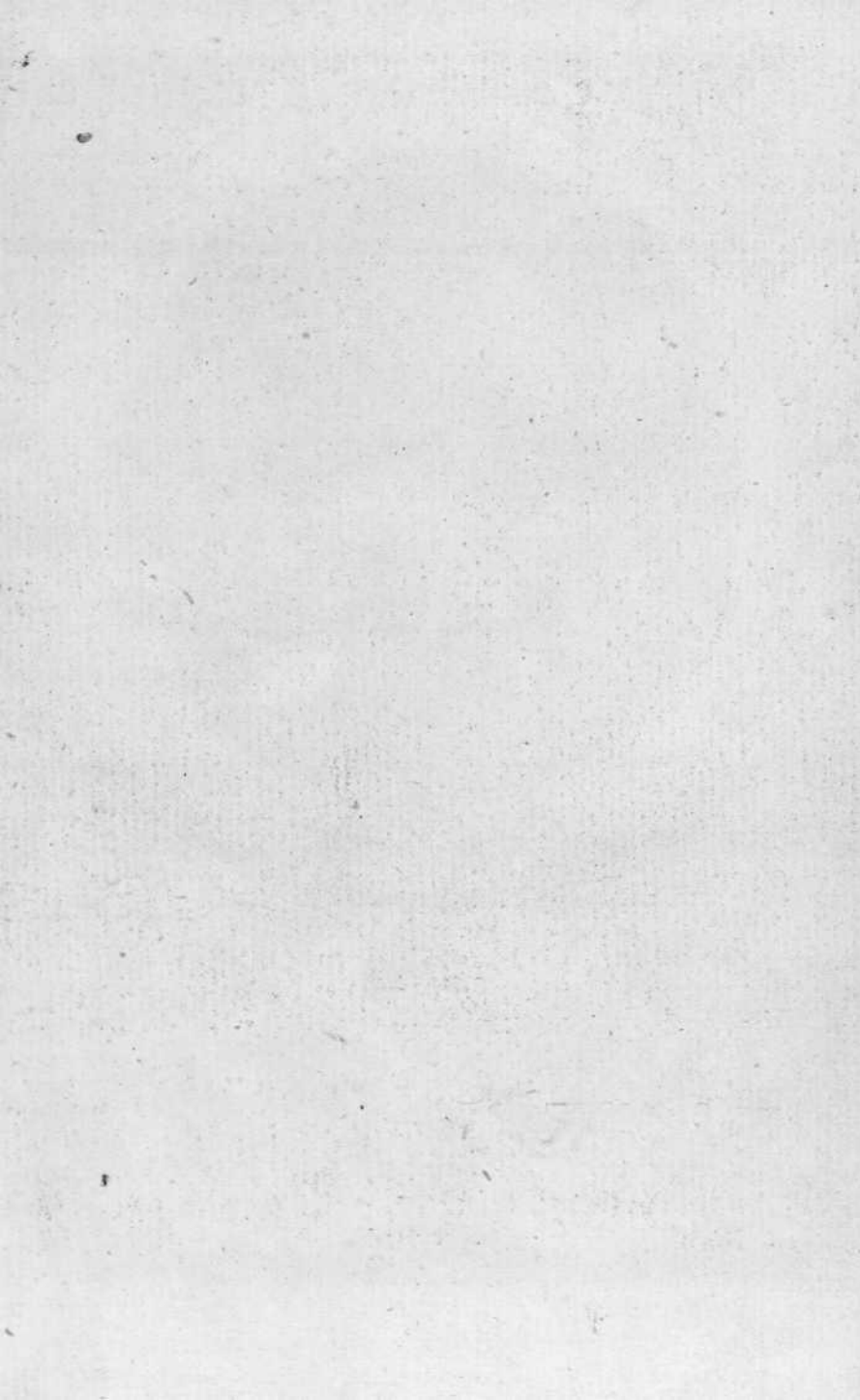
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES V.

VOL. I.



THE  
H I S T O R Y  
OF THE  
R E I G N  
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES V.  
VOL. I.









*Painted by S<sup>r</sup> Jos<sup>ph</sup> Reynolds*

*Engraved by J<sup>n</sup> Hall.*

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
REIGN  
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES V.

WITH  
A VIEW of the PROGRESS of SOCIETY in  
EUROPE, from the Subversion of the ROMAN EMPIRE,  
to the Beginning of the SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

By WILLIAM ROBERTSON, D.D.

PRINCIPAL of the University of EDINBURGH, and HISTO-  
RIOGRAPHER to his MAJESTY for SCOTLAND.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. I.

L O N D O N :

Printed for W. STRAHAN; T. CADELL, in the  
Strand; and J. BALFOUR, at Edinburgh.

MDCCLXXVII,

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
KING  
OF THE  
EMPEROR CHARLES  
A NEW  
EDITION  
BY  
WILLIAM ROBERTSON, D.D.  
LONDON  
PRINTED BY  
J. B. ALLEN, 10, BROADWAY  
NEW YORK



R.14470

DEDICATION

TO THE

K I N G.

SIR,

I PRESUME to lay before Your Majesty the History of a Period, which, if the abilities of the Writer were equal to the dignity of the Subject, would not be unworthy the attention of a Monarch, who is no less a Judge than a Patron of Literary Merit.

HISTORY claims it as her prerogative to offer instruction to KINGS, as well as to their people. What reflections the Reign of the Emperor

## DEDICATION.

CHARLES V. may suggest to Your Majesty, it becomes not me to conjecture. But your Subjects cannot observe the various calamities, which that Monarch's ambition to be distinguished as a Conqueror, brought upon his dominions, without recollecting the felicity of their own times, and looking up with gratitude to their Sovereign, who, during the fervour of youth, and amidst the career of victory, possessed such self-command, and maturity of judgment, as to set bounds to his own triumphs, and prefer the blessings of peace to the splendour of military glory.

POSTERITY will not only celebrate the Wisdom of Your Majesty's choice, but will enumerate the many Virtues, which render Your Reign conspicuous for a sacred regard to all the duties

## DEDICATION.

incumbent on the Sovereign of a Free  
People.

It is our happiness to feel the influence of these Virtues; and to live under the dominion of a Prince, who delights more in promoting the Publick Welfare, than in receiving the just Praise of his royal beneficence. I am,

SIR,

YOUR MAJESTY'S

Most faithful Subject,

And most dutiful Servant,

WILLIAM ROBERTSON.

DEDICATION.

incumbent on the Sovereign of a Free  
People.

It is our happiness to feel the influ-  
ence of these Virtues; and to live  
under the dominion of a Prince, who  
delights more in promoting the Pub-  
lick Welfare, than in receiving the  
just Praise of his royal beneficence.

I am,

SIR,

YOUR MAJESTY'S

Most faithful Subject,

And most dutiful Servant,

WILLIAM ROBERTSON.



## THE P R E F A C E.

**N**O period in the history of one's own country can be considered as altogether uninteresting. Such transactions as tend to illustrate the progress of its constitution, laws, or manners, merit the utmost attention. Even remote and minute events are objects of a curiosity, which, being natural to the human mind, the gratification of it is attended with pleasure.

**B**UT, with respect to the history of foreign States, we must set other bounds to our desire of information. The universal progress of science, during the two last centuries, the art of printing, and other obvious causes, have filled Europe with such a multiplicity of histories, and with such vast collections of historical materials, that the term of human life is too short for the study or even the perusal of them. It is necessary, then, not only for those who are called to conduct  
the

the affairs of nations, but for such as inquire and reason concerning them, to remain satisfied with a general knowledge of distant events, and to confine their study of history in detail chiefly to that period, in which the several States of Europe having become intimately connected, the operations of one power are so felt by all, as to influence their councils, and to regulate their measures.

SOME boundary, then, ought to be fixed in order to separate these periods. An æra should be pointed out, prior to which, each country, little connected with those around it, may trace its own history apart; after which, the transactions of every considerable nation in Europe become interesting and instructive to all. With this intention I undertook to write the history of the Emperor CHARLES V. It was during his administration that the powers of Europe were formed into one great political system, in which each took a station, wherein it has since remained with less variation, than could have been expected after the shocks occasioned by so many internal revolutions, and  
fo

so many foreign wars. The great events which happened then have not hitherto spent their force. The political principles and maxims, then established, still continue to operate. The ideas concerning the balance of power, then introduced or rendered general, still influence the councils of nations.

THE age of CHARLES V. may therefore be considered as the period at which the political state of Europe began to assume a new form. I have endeavoured to render my account of it, an introduction to the history of Europe subsequent to his reign. While his numerous Biographers describe his personal qualities and actions; while the historians of different countries relate occurrences the consequences of which were local or transient, it hath been my purpose to record only those great transactions in his reign, the effects of which were universal, or continue to be permanent.

As my readers could derive little instruction from such a history of the reign of CHARLES V. without some information concerning

cerning the state of Europe previous to the sixteenth century, my desire of supplying this has produced a preliminary volume, in which I have attempted to point out and explain the great causes and events, to whose operation all the improvements in the political state of Europe, from the subversion of the Roman Empire to the beginning of the sixteenth century, must be ascribed. I have exhibited a view of the progress of society in Europe, not only with respect to interior governments, laws, and manners, but with respect to the command of the national force requisite in foreign operations; and I have described the political constitution of the principal states in Europe at the time when Charles V. began his reign.

IN this part of my work I have been led into several critical disquisitions, which belong more properly to the province of the lawyer or antiquary, than to that of the historian. These I have placed at the end of the first volume, under the title of Proofs and Illustrations. Many of my readers will, probably, give little attention to such researches.

searches. To some they may, perhaps, appear the most curious and interesting part of the work. I have carefully pointed out the sources from which I have derived information, and have cited the writers on whose authority I rely with a minute exactness, which might appear to border upon ostentation, if it were possible to be vain of having read books, many of which nothing but the duty of examining with accuracy whatever I laid before the Publick, would have induced me to open. As my inquiries conducted me often into paths which were obscure or little frequented, such constant recourse to the authors who have been my guides, was not only necessary for authenticating the facts which are the foundations of my reasonings, but may be useful in pointing out the way to such as shall hereafter hold the same course, and in enabling them to carry on their researches with greater facility and success.

EVERY intelligent reader will observe one omission in my work, the reason of which it is necessary to explain. I have given no account of the conquests of Mexico and Peru,

Peru, or of the establishment of the Spanish colonies in the continent and islands of America. The history of these events I originally intended to have related at considerable length. But upon a nearer and more attentive consideration of this part of my plan, I found that the discovery of the new world; the state of society among its ancient inhabitants; their character, manners, and arts; the genius of the European settlements in its various provinces, together with the influence of these upon the systems of policy or commerce in Europe, were subjects so splendid and important, that a superficial view of them could afford little satisfaction; to treat of them as extensively as they merited, must produce an episode, disproportionate to the principal work. I have therefore reserved these for a separate history; which, if the performance now offered to the Publick shall receive its approbation, I propose to undertake.

THOUGH, by omitting such considerable but detached articles in the reign of Charles V. I have circumscribed my narration within more narrow limits, I am yet persuaded,  
from

from this view of the intention and nature of the work which I thought it necessary to lay before my readers, that the plan must still appear to them too extensive, and the undertaking too arduous. I have often felt them to be so. But my conviction of the utility of such a history prompted me to persevere. With what success I have executed it, the Publick must now judge. I wait, in solicitude, for its decision; to which I shall submit with a respectful silence.



**DIRECTIONS to the BINDER.**

Place the Head of the Author before the Title  
Vol. I.

The Head of Charles V. before the Title Vol. II.

----- Francis before the Title Vol. III.

Charles V. expiring, before the Title Vol. IV.

**A VIEW**

A  
V I E W  
OF THE  
PROGRESS OF SOCIETY  
IN  
E U R O P E,  
FROM THE  
SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE,  
TO THE  
BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

SECTION I.

*View of the Progress of Society in Europe, with respect  
to interior Government, Laws, and Manners.*

**T**WO great revolutions have happened in SECT. I.  
the political state, and in the manners of The effects  
the European nations. The first was oc- of the Ro-  
casioned by the progress of the Roman power; man power  
the second by the subversion of the Roman Em- on the state  
pire. When the spirit of conquest led the armies of Europe.  
of Rome beyond the Alps, they found all the  
countries which they invaded, inhabited by people  
whom they denominated barbarians, but who were

VOL. I.                      B                      never-

**SECT. I.** nevertheless brave and independent. These defended their ancient possessions with obstinate valour. It was by the superiority of their discipline, rather than of their courage, that the Romans gained any advantage over them. A single battle did not, as among the effeminate inhabitants of Asia, decide the fate of a state. The vanquished people resumed their arms with fresh spirit, and their undisciplined valour, animated by the love of liberty, supplied the want of conduct as well as of union. During those long and fierce struggles for dominion or independence, the countries of Europe were successively laid waste, a great part of their inhabitants perished in the field, many were carried into slavery, and a feeble remnant, incapable of further resistance, submitted to the Roman power.

The desolation which it occasioned.

The improvements which it introduced.

THE Romans having thus desolated Europe, set themselves to civilize it. The form of government which they established in the conquered provinces, though severe, was regular, and preserved publick tranquillity. As a consolation for the loss of liberty, they communicated their arts, sciences, language, and manners, to their new subjects. Europe began to breathe, and to recover strength after the calamities which it had undergone; agriculture was encouraged; population increased; the ruined cities were rebuilt; new towns were founded; an appearance of prosperity succeeded, and repaired, in some degree, the havock of war.

THIS state, however, was far from being happy, SECT. I.  
 or favourable to the improvement of the human The bad  
 mind. The vanquished nations were disarmed by consequen-  
 their conquerors, and overawed by soldiers kept in ces of their  
 pay to restrain them. They were given up as a dominion.  
 prey to rapacious governors, who plundered them  
 with impunity; and were drained of their wealth  
 by exorbitant taxes, imposed with so little atten-  
 tion to the situation of the provinces, that the  
 impositions were often increased in proportion to  
 their inability to support them. They were de-  
 prived of their most enterprising citizens, who re-  
 sorted to a distant capital in quest of preferment,  
 or of riches; and were accustomed in all their  
 actions to look up to a superior, and tamely to  
 receive his commands. Under so many depres-  
 sing circumstances, it was impossible that they  
 could retain vigour or generosity of mind. The  
 martial and independent spirit, which had distin-  
 guished their ancestors, became extinct among all  
 the people subjected to the Roman yoke; they lost  
 not only the habit but even the capacity of deciding  
 for themselves, or of acting from the impulse of  
 their own minds; and the dominion of the Ro-  
 mans, like that of all great Empires, degraded  
 and debased the human species [A].

A SOCIETY in this state could not subsist long. The irrup-  
 There were defects in the Roman government, tion of the  
 even in its most perfect form, which threatened its barbarous  
 dissolution. Time ripened these original seeds of nations.

[A] NOTE I.

B 2

corruption,

## SECT. I.

corruption, and gave birth to many new disorders. A constitution, unsound, and worn out, must have fallen in pieces of itself, without any external shock. The violent irruption of the Goths, Vandals, Huns, and other barbarians hastened this event, and precipitated the downfall of the Empire. New nations seemed to arise, and to rush from unknown regions, in order to take vengeance on the Romans for the calamities which they had inflicted on mankind. These fierce tribes either inhabited the various provinces in Germany which had never been subdued by the Romans, or were scattered over the vast countries in the north of Europe, and north-west of Asia, which are now occupied by the Danes, the Swedes, the Poles, the subjects of the Russian Empire, and the Tartars. Their condition, and transactions, previous to their invasion of the Empire, are but little known. All our information with respect to these is derived from the Romans; and as they did not penetrate far into countries which were at that time uncultivated and uninhabited, the accounts of their original state given by them are extremely imperfect. The rude inhabitants themselves, destitute of science, and of records, without leisure, or curiosity to enquire into remote events, retained, perhaps, some indistinct memory of recent occurrences, but beyond these, all was buried in oblivion, or involved in darkness, and in fable [B].

State of the  
countries  
from which  
they issued.

THE prodigious swarms which poured in upon the Empire from the beginning of the fourth cen-

[B] NOTE II.

tury

tury to the final extinction of the Roman power, have given rise to an opinion that the countries whence they issued were crowded with inhabitants; and various theories have been formed to account for such an extraordinary degree of population as hath procured these countries the appellation of The Storehouse of Nations. But if we consider, that the countries possessed by the people who invaded the Empire were of vast extent; that a great part of these was covered with woods and marshes; that some of the most considerable of the barbarous nations subsisted entirely by hunting or pasturage, in both which states of society large tracts of land are required for maintaining a few inhabitants; and that all of them were strangers to the arts and industry, without which population cannot increase to any great degree, it is evident, that these countries could not be so populous in ancient times as they are at present, when they still continue to be less peopled than any other part of Europe or of Asia.

BUT if these circumstances prevented the barbarous nations from becoming populous, they contributed to inspire, or to strengthen the martial spirit by which they were distinguished. Inured by the rigour of their climate, or the poverty of their soil, to hardships, which rendered their bodies firm, and their minds vigorous; accustomed to a course of life which was a continual preparation for action; and disdaining every occupation but that of war; they undertook, and prosecuted their

The people  
fit for daring  
enterprizes.

**SECT. I.** military enterprizes with an ardour and impetuosity, of which men softened by the refinements of more polished times can scarcely form any idea [C].

The motives of their first excursions.

THEIR first inroads into the Empire proceeded rather from the love of plunder, than from the desire of new settlements. Roused to arms by some enterprizing or popular leader, they sallied out of their forests; broke in upon the frontier provinces with irresistible violence; put all who opposed them to the sword; carried off the most valuable effects of the inhabitants; dragged along multitudes of captives in chains; wasted all before them with fire or sword; and returned in triumph to their wilds and fastnesses. Their success, together with the accounts which they gave of the unknown conveniencies and luxuries that abounded in countries better cultivated, or blessed with a milder climate than their own, excited new adventurers, and exposed the frontier to new devastations.

Their reasons for settling in the countries which they conquered.

WHEN nothing was left to plunder in the adjacent provinces, ravaged by frequent incursions, they marched farther from home, and finding it difficult, or dangerous to return, they began to settle in the countries which they had subdued. The sudden and short excursions in quest of booty, which had alarmed and disquieted the Empire, ceased; a more dreadful calamity impended. Great bodies of armed men, with their wives and

[C] NOTE III.

children,



children, and slaves and flocks, issued forth, like regular colonies, in quest of new settlements. People who had no cities, and seldom any fixed habitation, were so little attached to their native soil, that they migrated without reluctance from one place to another. New adventurers followed them. The lands which they deserted were occupied by more remote tribes of barbarians. These, in their turn, pushed forward into more fertile countries, and, like a torrent continually increasing, rolled on, and swept every thing before them. In less than two centuries from their first irruption, barbarians of various names and lineage, plundered and took possession of Thrace, Pannonia, Gaul, Spain, Africa, and at last of Italy, and Rome itself. The vast fabrick of the Roman power, which it had been the work of ages to perfect, was in that short period overturned from the foundation.

SECT. L

The extent of their settlements.

MANY concurring causes prepared the way for this great revolution, and ensured success to the nations which invaded the Empire. The Roman commonwealth had conquered the world by the wisdom of its civil maxims, and the rigour of its military discipline. But, under the Emperors, the former were forgotten or despised, and the latter was gradually relaxed. The armies of the Empire in the fourth and fifth centuries bore scarcely any resemblance to those invincible legions which had been victorious wherever they marched. Instead of freemen, who voluntarily took arms from the

The circumstances which occasioned the downfall of the Roman Empire.

**SECT. I.** love of glory, or of their country, provincials and barbarians were bribed or forced into service. They were too feeble, or too proud to submit to the fatigue of military duty. They even complained of the weight of their defensive armour, as intolerable, and laid it aside. Infantry, from which the armies of ancient Rome derived their vigour and stability, fell into contempt; the effeminate and undisciplined foldiers of later times could hardly be brought to venture into the field but on horseback. These wretched troops, however, were the only guardians of the Empire. The jealousy of despotism had deprived the people of the use of arms; and subjects oppressed and rendered incapable of defending themselves, had neither spirit nor inclination to resist their invaders, from whom they had little to fear, because their condition could hardly be rendered more unhappy. As the martial spirit became extinct, the revenues of the Empire gradually diminished. The taste for the luxuries of the East increased to such a pitch in the Imperial court, that great sums were carried into India, from which money never returns. By the vast subsidies paid to the barbarous nations, a still greater quantity of species was withdrawn from circulation. The frontier provinces wasted by frequent incursions became unable to pay the customary tribute; and the wealth of the world, which had long centered in the capital of the Empire, ceased to flow thither in the same abundance, or was diverted into other channels. The limits of the Empire continued to be as extensive as ever,  
while

while the spirit requisite for its defence declined, and its resources were exhausted. A vast body, languid, and almost unanimated, became incapable of any effort to save itself, and was easily overpowered. The Emperors, who had the absolute direction of this disordered system, sunk in the softness of eastern luxury, shut up within the walls of a palace, ignorant of war, unacquainted with affairs, and governed entirely by women and eunuchs, or by ministers equally effeminate, trembled at the approach of danger, and under circumstances which called for the utmost vigour in counsel as well as in action, discovered all the impotent irresolution of fear, and of folly.

SECT. I.

IN every respect, the condition of the barbarous nations was the reverse of that of the Romans. Among them, the martial spirit was in full vigour; their leaders were hardy and enterprizing; the arts which had enervated the Romans were unknown among them; and such was the nature of their military institutions, that they brought forces into the field without any trouble, and supported them at little expence. The mercenary and effeminate troops stationed on the frontier, astonished at their fierceness, either fled at their approach, or were routed in the first onset. The feeble expedient to which the Emperors had recourse, of taking large bodies of the barbarians into pay, and of employing them to repel new invaders, instead of retarding, hastened the destruction of the Empire. They soon turned their arms against their masters,

The circumstances which contributed to the success of the barbarous nations.

and

**SECT. I.** and with greater advantage than ever : for, by serving in the Roman armies, they had acquired all the discipline, or skill in war, which the Romans still retained ; and, upon adding these to their native ferocity, they became altogether irresistible.

The spirit  
with which  
they carried  
on war,

BUT though from these, and many other causes, the progress and conquests of the nations which over-ran the Empire, became so extremely rapid, they were accompanied with horrible devastations, and an incredible destruction of the human species. Civilized nations which take arms upon cool reflection, from motives of policy or prudence, with a view to guard against some distant danger, or to prevent some remote contingency, carry on their hostilities with so little rancour, or animosity, that war among them is disarmed of half its terrors. Barbarians are strangers to such refinements. They rush into war with impetuosity, and prosecute it with violence. Their sole object is to make their enemies feel the weight of their vengeance, nor does their rage subside until it be satiated with inflicting on them every possible calamity. It is with such a spirit that the savage tribes in America carry on their petty wars. It was with the same spirit that the more powerful and no less fierce barbarians in the north of Europe, and of Asia, fell upon the Roman Empire.

The desolation which they brought upon Europe,

WHEREVER they marched, their route was marked with blood. They ravaged or destroyed all around them. They made no distinction between what

was sacred, and what was profane. They respected no age, or sex, or rank. What escaped the fury of the first inundation, perished in those which followed it. The most fertile and populous provinces were converted into deserts, in which were scattered the ruins of villages and cities, that afforded shelter to a few miserable inhabitants whom chance had preserved, or the sword of the enemy, wearied with destroying, had spared. The conquerors who first settled in the countries which they had wasted, were expelled or exterminated by new invaders, who coming from regions farther removed from the civilized parts of the world, were still more fierce and rapacious. This brought new calamities upon mankind, which did not cease until the north, by pouring forth successive swarms, was drained of people, and could no longer furnish instruments of destruction. Famine and pestilence, which always march in the train of war, when it ravages with such inconsiderate cruelty, raged in every part of Europe, and completed its sufferings. If a man were called to fix upon the period in the history of the world, during which the condition of the human race was most calamitous and afflicted, he would, without hesitation, name that which elapsed from the death of Theodosius the Great, to the establishment of the Lombards in Italy<sup>a</sup>. The contemporary authors who beheld that scene of desolation, labour and are at a

SECT. I.

<sup>a</sup> Theodosius died A. D. 395, the reign of Alboinus in Lombardy began A. D. 571; so that this period was 176 years.

**SECT. I.** Iofs for expreffions to describe the horror of it. *The scourge of God, The destroyer of nations,* are the dreadful epithets by which they distinguish the most noted of the barbarous leaders; and they compare the ruin which they had brought on the world, to the havock occasioned by earthquakes, conflagrations, or deluges, the most formidable and fatal calamities which the imagination of man can conceive.

The universal change which they occasioned in the state of Europe.

BUT no expreffions can convey so perfect an idea of the destructive progress of the barbarians as that which must strike an attentive observer, when he contemplates the total change, which he will discover in the state of Europe after it began to recover some degree of tranquillity towards the close of the sixth century. The Saxons were by that time masters of the southern, and more fertile provinces of Britain; the Franks of Gaul; the Huns of Pannonia; the Goths of Spain; the Goths and Lombards of Italy and the adjacent provinces. Scarce any vestige of the Roman policy, jurisprudence, arts, or literature, remained. New forms of government, new laws, new manners, new dresses, new languages, and new names of men and countries, were every where introduced. To make a great or sudden alteration with respect to any of these, unless where the ancient inhabitants of a country have been almost totally exterminated, has proved an undertaking beyond the power of the greatest conquerors [D]. The total change which the settlement of the barbarous nations occasioned

[D] NOTE IV.

in

in the state of Europe, may, therefore, be con- SECT. I.  
sidered as a more decisive proof, than even the  
testimony of contemporary historians, of the de-  
structive violence with which these invaders carried  
on their conquests, and of the havock which they  
had made from one extremity of this quarter of  
the globe to the other [E].

IN the obscurity of the chaos occasioned by this From this  
general wreck of nations, we must search for the state of dis-  
seeds of order, and endeavour to discover the first order the  
rudiments of the policy and laws now established laws of go-  
in Europe. To this source, the historians of its vernment  
different kingdoms have attempted, though with now esta-  
less attention and industry than the importance of blished must  
the enquiry merits, to trace back the institutions be traced.  
and customs peculiar to their countrymen. It is  
not my province to give a minute detail of the pro-  
gress of government and manners in each particu-  
lar nation, whose transactions are the object of the  
following history. But, in order to exhibit a just  
view of the state of Europe at the opening of the  
sixteenth century, it is necessary to look back, and  
to contemplate the condition of the northern na-  
tions upon their first settlement in those countries  
which they occupied. It is necessary to mark the  
great steps by which they advanced from barba-  
rism to refinement, and to point out those general  
principles and events which, by their uniform as  
well as extensive operation, conducted all of them

[E] NOTE V.

to



SECT. I. to that degree of improvement in policy and in manners which they had attained at the period when Charles V. began his reign.

The principles on which the northern nations made their settlements in Europe.

WHEN nations subject to despotic government make conquests, these serve only to extend the dominion and the power of their master. But armies composed of freemen conquer for themselves, not for their leaders. The people who overturned the Roman Empire, and settled in its various provinces, were of the latter class. Not only the different nations that issued from the north of Europe, which has always been considered as the seat of liberty, but the Huns and Alans who inhabited part of those countries which have been marked out as the peculiar region of servitude<sup>b</sup>, enjoyed freedom and independence in such a high degree as seems to be scarcely compatible with a state of social union, or with the subordination necessary to maintain it. They followed the chieftain who led them forth in quest of new settlements, not by constraint, but from choice; not as soldiers whom he could order to march, but as volunteers who offered to accompany him [F]. They considered their conquests as a common property, in which all had a title to share, as all had contributed to acquire them [G]. In what manner, or by what principles, they divided among them the lands which they seized, we cannot now determine with any

<sup>b</sup> De l'esprit des loix, liv. 17. ch. 3.

[F] NOTE VI.

[G] NOTE VII.

certainty.



certainty. There is no nation in Europe whose records reach back to this remote period; and there is little information to be got from the uninformative and meagre chronicles, compiled by writers ignorant of the true end, and unacquainted with the proper objects, of history.

SECT. I.

THIS new division of property, however, together with the maxims and manners to which it gave rise, gradually introduced a species of government formerly unknown. This singular institution is now distinguished by the name of the *Feudal system*: and though the barbarous nations which framed it, settled in their new territories at different times, came from different countries, spoke various languages, and were under the command of separate leaders, the Feudal policy and laws were established, with little variation, in every kingdom of Europe. This amazing uniformity hath induced some authors<sup>c</sup> to believe that all these nations, notwithstanding so many apparent circumstances of distinction, were originally the same people. But it may be ascribed with greater probability to the similar state of society and of manners to which they were accustomed in their native countries, and to the similar situation in which they found themselves on taking possession of their new domains.

The feudal government gradually established among them.

As the conquerors of Europe had their acquisitions to maintain, not only against such of the

<sup>c</sup> Procop. de Bello Vandal. ap. Script. Byz. edit. Ven. vol. i.

## SECT. I.

National  
defence the  
great object  
of feudal  
policy.

ancient inhabitants as they had spared, but against the more formidable inroads of new invaders, self-defence was their chief care, and seems to have been the sole object of their first institutions and policy. Instead of those loose associations, which, though they scarcely diminished their personal independence, had been sufficient for their security while they remained in their original countries, they saw the necessity of confederating more closely together, and of relinquishing some of their private rights in order to attain publick safety. Every freeman, upon receiving a portion of the lands which were divided, bound himself to appear in arms against the enemies of the community. This military service was the condition upon which he received and held his lands, and as they were exempted from every other burden, that tenure, among a warlike people, was deemed both easy and honourable. The King or general, who led them to conquest, continuing still to be the head of the colony, had, of course, the largest portion allotted to him. Having thus acquired the means of rewarding past services, as well as of gaining new adherents, he parcelled out his lands with this view, binding those on whom they were bestowed, to follow his standard with a number of men in proportion to the extent of the territory which they received, and to bear arms in his defence. His chief officers imitated the example of the sovereign, and in distributing portions of their lands among their dependants, annexed the same condition

tion to the grant. Thus a feudal kingdom resembled a military establishment, rather than a civil institution. The victorious army, cantoned out in the country which it had seized, continued ranged under its proper officers, and subordinate to military command. The names of a soldier and of a free-man were synonymous<sup>d</sup>. Every proprietor of land, girt with a sword, was ready to march at the summons of his superior, and to take the field against the common enemy.

BUT though the Feudal policy seems to be so admirably calculated for defence against the assaults of any foreign power, its provisions for the interior order and tranquillity of society were extremely defective. The principles of disorder and corruption are discernible in that constitution under its best and most perfect form. They soon unfolded themselves, and spreading with rapidity through every part of the system, produced the most fatal effects. The bond of political union was extremely feeble; the sources of anarchy were innumerable. The monarchical and aristocratical parts of the constitution, having no intermediate power to balance them, were perpetually at variance, and jostling with each other. The powerful vassals of the crown soon extorted a confirmation for life of those grants of land, which being at first purely gratuitous, had been bestowed only during plea-

The feudal government defective in its provisions for interior order in society.

<sup>d</sup> Da Cange Glossar. voc. *Miles*.

## SECT. I.

sure. Not satisfied with this, they prevailed to have them converted into hereditary possessions: One step more completed their usurpations, and rendered them unalienable [H]. With an ambition no less enterprising, and more preposterous, they appropriated to themselves titles of honour, as well as offices of power or trust. These personal marks of distinction, which the publick admiration bestows on illustrious merit, or which the publick confidence confers on extraordinary abilities, were annexed to certain families, and transmitted like fiefs, from father to son, by hereditary right. The crown vassals having thus secured the possession of their lands and dignities, the nature of the Feudal institutions, which though founded on subordination verged to independence, led them to new, and still more dangerous encroachments on the prerogatives of the sovereign. They obtained the power of supreme jurisdiction both civil and criminal within their own territories; the right of coining money; together with the privilege of carrying on war against their private enemies in their own name, and by their own authority. The ideas of political subjection were almost entirely lost, and frequently scarce any appearance of feudal subordination remained. Nobles who had acquired such enormous power, scorned to consider themselves as subjects. They aspired openly at being independent: the bonds which connected the principal members of the constitution with the crown, were dissolved. A kingdom, considerable

[H] NOTE VIII.

in name and in extent, was broken into as many separate principalities as it contained powerful barons. A thousand causes of jealousy and discord subsisted among them, and gave rise to as many wars. Every country in Europe, wasted or kept in continual alarm during these endless contests, was filled with castles and places of strength, erected for the security of the inhabitants, not against foreign force, but against internal hostilities. An universal anarchy, destructive, in a great measure, of all the advantages which men expect to derive from society, prevailed. The people, the most numerous as well as the most useful part of the community, were either reduced to a state of actual servitude, or treated with the same insolence and rigour as if they had been degraded into that wretched condition [I]. The King, stripped of almost every prerogative, and without authority to enact or to execute salutary laws, could neither protect the innocent, nor punish the guilty. The nobles, superior to all restraint, harassed each other with perpetual wars, oppressed their fellow-subjects, and humbled or insulted their sovereign. To crown all, time gradually fixed, and rendered venerable this pernicious system, which violence had established.

SUCH was the state of Europe with respect to the interior administration of government from the seventh to the eleventh century. All the external operations of its various states, during this period, were, of course, extremely feeble. A kingdom

It prevented nations like-wise from acting with vigour in their external operations.

[I] NOTE IX.

SECT. I. dismembered, and torn with dissension, without any common interest to rouse, or any common head to conduct its force, was incapable of acting with vigour. Almost all the wars in Europe, during the ages which I have mentioned, were trifling, indecisive, and productive of no considerable event. They resembled the short incursions of pirates or banditti, rather than the steady operations of a regular army. Every baron, at the head of his vassals, carried on some petty enterprize, to which he was prompted by his own ambition, or revenge. The state itself, destitute of union, either remained altogether inactive, or if it attempted to make any effort, that served only to discover its impotence. The superior genius of Charlemagne, it is true, united all these disjointed and discordant members, and forming them again into one body, restored to government that degree of activity which distinguishes his reign, and renders the transactions of it, objects not only of attention but of admiration to more enlightened times. But this state of union and vigour, not being natural to the feudal government, was of short duration. Immediately upon his death, the spirit which animated and sustained the vast system which he had established, being withdrawn, it broke into pieces. All the calamities which flow from anarchy and discord, returning with additional force, afflicted the different kingdoms into which his Empire was split. From that time to the eleventh century, a succession of uninteresting events; a series of wars, the motives



Motives as well as the consequences of which were SECT. I. equally unimportant, fill and deform the annals of all the nations in Europe.

To these pernicious effects of the feudal anarchy, The fatal effects of this state of society on sciences and arts; may be added its fatal influence on the character and improvement of the human mind. If men do not enjoy the protection of regular government, together with the certainty of personal security, which naturally flows from it, they never attempt to make progress in science, nor aim at attaining refinement in taste, or in manners. That period of turbulence, oppression, and rapine, which I have described, was ill suited to favour improvement in any of these. In less than a century after the barbarous nations settled in their new conquests, almost all the effects of the knowledge and civility which the Romans had spread through Europe disappeared. Not only the arts of elegance which minister to luxury, and are supported by it, but many of the useful arts, without which life can scarcely be considered as comfortable, were neglected or lost. Literature, science, taste, were words hardly in use during the ages we are contemplating; or if they occur at any time, eminence in them is ascribed to persons and productions so contemptible, that it appears their true import was little understood. Persons of the highest rank, and in the most eminent stations, could not read or write. Many of the clergy did not understand the breviary which they were obliged daily

SECT. I. to recite; some of them could scarcely read it [K].

All memory of past transactions was lost, or preserved in annals filled with trifling events, or legendary tales. Even the codes of laws published by the several nations which established themselves in the different countries of Europe, fell into disuse, while, in their place, customs, vague and capricious, were substituted. The human mind neglected, uncultivated, and depressed, sunk into the most profound ignorance. Europe did not produce, during four centuries, one author who merits to be read, either on account of the elegance of his composition, or the justness and novelty of his sentiments. There is hardly one invention useful or ornamental to society of which that long period can boast.

upon religion;

EVEN the Christian religion, though its precepts are delivered, and its institutions are fixed in scripture with a precision which should have exempted them from being misinterpreted or corrupted, degenerated during those ages of darkness into an illiberal superstition. The barbarous nations when converted to Christianity changed the object, not the spirit of their religious worship. They endeavoured to conciliate the favour of the true God by means not unlike to those which they had employed in order to appease their false deities. Instead of aspiring to sanctity and virtue, which alone can render men acceptable to the great author of

[K] NOTE X.

order



order and of excellence, they imagined that they SECT. I.  
 satisfied every obligation of duty by a scrupulous  
 observance of external ceremonies [L]. Religion,  
 according to their conception of it, comprehended  
 nothing else; and the rites, by which they per-  
 suaded themselves that they should gain the favour  
 of heaven, were of such a nature as might have  
 been expected from the rude ideas of the ages  
 which devised and introduced them. They were  
 either so unmeaning as to be altogether unworthy  
 of the Being to whose honour they were conse-  
 crated; or so absurd as to be a disgrace to reason  
 and humanity [M]. Charlemagne in France, and  
 Alfred the Great in England, endeavoured to dis-  
 pel this darkness, and gave their subjects a short  
 glimpse of light and knowledge. But the igno-  
 rance of the age was too powerful for their efforts  
 and institutions. The darkness returned, and set-  
 tled over Europe more thick and heavy than  
 formerly,

As the inhabitants of Europe during these cen-  
 turies were strangers to the arts which embellish  
 a polished age, they were destitute of the virtues  
 which abound among people who continue in a  
 simple state. Force of mind, a sense of personal  
 dignity, gallantry in enterprize, invincible perse-  
 verance in execution, contempt of danger and of  
 death, are the characteristic virtues of uncivilized  
 nations. But these are all the offspring of equa-

upon the  
 character  
 and virtues  
 of the hu-  
 man mind.

[L] NOTE XI.

[M] NOTE XII.

SECT. I. lity and independence, both which the feudal institutions had destroyed. The spirit of domination corrupted the nobles; the yoke of servitude depressed the people; the generous sentiments inspired by a sense of equality were extinguished, and nothing remained to be a check on ferocity and violence. Human society is in its most corrupted state at that period when men have lost their original independence and simplicity of manners, but have not attained that degree of refinement which introduces a sense of decorum and of propriety in conduct, as a restraint on those passions which lead to heinous crimes. Accordingly, a greater number of those atrocious actions which fill the mind of man with astonishment and horror, occur in the history of the centuries under review, than in that of any period of the same extent in the annals of Europe. If we open the history of Gregory of Tours, or of any contemporary author, we meet with a series of deeds of cruelty, perfidy, and revenge, so wild and enormous as almost to exceed belief.

From the beginning of the eleventh century government and manners begin to improve.

BUT, according to the observation of an elegant and profound historian<sup>c</sup>, there is an ultimate point of depression, as well as of exaltation, from which human affairs naturally return in a contrary progress, and beyond which they never pass either in their advancement or decline. When defects, either in the form, or in the administration

<sup>c</sup> Hume's History of England, vol. ii. p. 441.

of government, occasion such disorders in society as are excessive and intolerable, it becomes the common interest to discover and to apply such remedies as will most effectually remove them. Slight inconveniencies may be long overlooked or endured, but when abuses grow to a certain pitch, the society must go to ruin, or must attempt to reform them. The disorders in the feudal system, together with the corruption of taste and manners consequent upon these, which had gone on increasing during a long course of years, seem to have attained their utmost point of excess towards the close of the eleventh century. From that æra, we may date the return of government and manners in a contrary direction, and can trace a succession of causes and events which contributed, some with a nearer and more powerful, others with a more remote and less perceptible influence, to abolish confusion and barbarism, and to introduce order, regularity, and refinement.

In pointing out and explaining these causes and events, it is not necessary to observe the order of time with a chronological accuracy; it is of more importance to keep in view their mutual connection and dependence, and to show how the operation of one event, or one cause, prepared the way for another, and augmented its influence. We have hitherto been contemplating the progress of that darkness which spread over Europe from its first approach, to the period of greatest obscurity; a more pleasant exercise begins here, to ob-

Necessary to  
point out  
the causes  
and events  
which con-  
tribute to  
wards this  
improve-  
ment.

serve

SECT. I. serve the first dawnings of returning light, to mark the various accessions by which it gradually increased and advanced towards the full splendor of day.

The tendency of the Crusades to introduce a change in government and manners.

The more remote causes of these expeditions.

I. THE Crusades, or expeditions in order to rescue the Holy Land out of the hands of Infidels, seem to be the first event that roused Europe from the lethargy in which it had been long sunk, and that tended to introduce any change in government, or in manners. It is natural to the human mind to view those places which have been distinguished by being the residence of any illustrious personage, or the scene of any great transaction, with some degree of delight and veneration. From this principle flowed the superstitious devotion with which Christians, from the earliest ages of the church, were accustomed to visit that country which the Almighty had selected as the inheritance of his favourite people, and in which the Son of God had accomplished the redemption of mankind. As this distant pilgrimage could not be performed without considerable expence, fatigue, and danger, it appeared the more meritorious, and came to be considered as an expiation for almost every crime. An opinion which spread with rapidity over Europe about the close of the tenth and beginning of the eleventh century, and which gained universal credit, wonderfully augmented the number of credulous pilgrims, and increased the ardour with which they undertook this useless voyage. The thousand years mentioned by

St. John<sup>f</sup> were supposed to be accomplished, and the end of the world to be at hand. A general consternation seized mankind; many relinquished their possessions; and abandoning their friends and families, hurried with precipitation to the Holy Land, where they imagined that Christ would quickly appear to judge the world<sup>g</sup>. While Palestine continued subject to the Caliphs, they had encouraged the resort of pilgrims to Jerusalem; and considered this as a beneficial species of commerce, which brought into their dominions gold and silver, and carried nothing out of them but relicks and consecrated trinkets. But the Turks having conquered Syria about the middle of the eleventh century, pilgrims were exposed to outrages of every kind from these fierce barbarians<sup>h</sup>. This change happening precisely at the juncture when the panic terror which I have mentioned rendered pilgrimages most frequent, filled Europe with alarm and indignation. Every person who returned from Palestine related the dangers which he had encountered, in visiting the holy city, and described with exaggeration the cruelty and vexations of the Turks.

<sup>f</sup> Revel. xx. 2, 3, 4.

<sup>g</sup> Chronic. Will. Godelli ap. Bouquet Recueil des Historiens de France, tom. x. p. 262. Vita Abbonis, ibid. p. 332. Chronic. S. Pantaleonis ap. Eccard. Corp. Scrip. medii ævi, vol. i. p. 909. Annalista Saxo, ibid. 576.

<sup>h</sup> Jo. Dan. Schoepflini de sacris Gallorum in orientem expeditionibus, p. 4. Argent. 1726. 4to.

## SECT. I.

The immediate occasion of them.

WHEN the minds of men were thus prepared, the zeal of a fanatical monk, who conceived the idea of leading all the forces of Christendom against the infidels, and of driving them out of the Holy Land by violence, was sufficient to give a beginning to that wild enterprize. Peter the hermit, for that was the name of this martial apostle, run from province to province with a crucifix in his hand, exciting Princes and people to this Holy War, and wherever he came kindled the same enthusiastic ardour for it with which he himself was animated. The council of Placentia, where upwards of thirty thousand persons were assembled, pronounced the scheme to have been suggested by the immediate inspiration of heaven. In the council of Clermont, still more numerous, as soon as the measure was proposed, all cried out with one voice, "It is the will of God." Persons of all ranks were smitten with the contagion; not only the gallant nobles of that age, with their martial followers, whom the boldness of a romantic enterprize might have been apt to allure, but men in the more humble and pacific stations of life; ecclesiastics of every order, and even women and children, engaged with emulation in an undertaking which was deemed sacred and meritorious. If we may believe the concurring testimony of contemporary authors, six millions of persons assumed the cross<sup>1</sup>, which was the badge that distinguished such as devoted themselves to this holy warfare. All Europe, says the

<sup>1</sup> Fulcherius Carnotensis ap. Bongarsii *Gesta Dei per Francos*, vol. i. 387. edit. Han. 1611.



Princess Anna Comnena, torn up from the foundation, seemed ready to precipitate itself in one united body upon Asia<sup>k</sup>. Nor did the fumes of this enthusiastic zeal evaporate at once: the frenzy was as lasting as it was extravagant. During two centuries, Europe seems to have had no object but to recover, or keep possession of the Holy Land, and through that period vast armies continued to march thither [N].

SECT. I.

THE first efforts of valour animated by enthusiasm were irresistible; part of the lesser Asia, all Syria and Palestine were wrested from the infidels; the banner of the cross was displayed on Mount Sion; Constantinople, the capital of the Christian empire in the East, was seized by a body of those adventurers, who had taken arms against the Mahometans, and an Earl of Flanders, and his descendants, kept possession of the Imperial throne during half a century. But though the first impression of the Crusaders was so unexpected that they made their conquests with great ease, they found infinite difficulty in preserving them. Establishments so distant from Europe, surrounded by warlike nations, animated with fanatical zeal scarcely inferior to that of the Crusaders themselves, were perpetually in danger of being overturned. Before the extinction of the thirteenth century, the Christians were driven out of all their Asiatic possessions, in acquiring of which incredible numbers of men had

The success  
of the Crusades.

A. D. 1291.

<sup>k</sup> Alexias, lib. x. ap. Byz. script. vol. xi, p. 224.

[N] NOTE XII.

perished

## SECT. I.

perished, and immense sums of money had been wasted. The only common enterprize in which the European nations ever engaged, and which all undertook with equal ardour, remains a singular monument of human folly.

The beneficial effects of the Crusades on manners.

BUT from these expeditions, extravagant as they were, beneficial consequences followed, which had neither been foreseen nor expected. In their progress towards the Holy Land, the followers of the cross marched through countries better cultivated, and more civilized than their own. Their first rendezvous was commonly in Italy, in which Venice, Genoa, Pisa and other cities had begun to apply themselves to commerce, and had made some advances towards wealth as well as refinement. They embarked there, and landing in Dalmatia, pursued their route by land to Constantinople. Though the military spirit had been long extinct in the eastern Empire, and a despotism of the worst species had annihilated almost every publick virtue, yet Constantinople, having never felt the destructive rage of the barbarous nations, was the greatest, as well as the most beautiful city in Europe, and the only one in which there remained any image of the ancient elegance in manners and arts. The naval power of the eastern empire was considerable. Manufactures of the most curious fabrick were carried on in its dominions. Constantinople was the only mart in Europe for the commodities of the East Indies. Although the Saracens and Turks had torn from the Empire many of its richest provinces,



vinces, and had reduced it within very narrow SECT. I.  
bounds, yet great wealth flowed into the capital from these various sources, which not only cherished such a taste for magnificence, but kept alive such a relish for the sciences, as appears considerable when compared with what was known in other parts of Europe. Even in Asia, the Europeans who had assumed the cross, found the remains of the knowledge and arts which the example and encouragement of the Caliphs had diffused through their Empire. Although the attention of the historians of the Crusades was fixed on other objects than the state of society and manners among the nations which they invaded, although most of them had neither taste nor discernment enough to describe these, they relate, however, such signal acts of humanity and generosity in the conduct of Saladin, as well as some other leaders of the Mahometans, as give us a very high idea of their manners. It was not possible for the Crusaders to travel through so many countries, and to behold their various customs and institutions, without acquiring information and improvement. Their views enlarged; their prejudices wore off; new ideas crowded into their minds; and they must have been sensible on many occasions of the rusticity of their own manners when compared with those of a more polished people. These impressions were not so slight as to be effaced upon their return to their native countries. A close intercourse subsisted between the East and West during two centuries; new armies were continually marching from Europe

**SECT. I.** rope to Asia, while former adventurers returned home and imported many of the customs to which they had been familiarized by a long residence abroad. Accordingly, we discover, soon after the commencement of the Crusades, greater splendour in the courts of Princes, greater pomp in publick ceremonies, a more refined taste in pleasure and amusements, together with a more romantic spirit of enterprize spreading gradually over Europe; and to these wild expeditions, the effect of superstition or folly, we owe the first gleams of light which tended to dispel barbarity and ignorance.

Their influence on the state of property.

BUT these beneficial consequences of the Crusades took place slowly; their influence upon the state of property, and consequently of power, in the different kingdoms of Europe, was more immediate as well as discernible. The nobles who assumed the cross, and bound themselves to march to the Holy Land, soon perceived that great sums were necessary towards defraying the expence of such a distant expedition, and enabling them to appear with suitable dignity at the head of their vassals. But the genius of the feudal system was averse to the imposition of extraordinary taxes; and subjects in that age were unaccustomed to pay them. No expedient remained for levying the sums requisite, but the sale of their possessions. As men were inflamed with romantic expectations of the splendid conquests which they hoped to make in Asia, and possessed with such zeal for recovering the Holy

Holy Land as swallowed up every other passion, SECT. I.  
 they relinquished their ancient inheritances without any reluctance, and for prices far below their value, that they might fall forth as adventurers in quest of new settlements in unknown countries. The Monarchs of the great kingdoms in the west, none of whom had engaged in the first Crusade, eagerly seized this opportunity of annexing considerable territories to their crowns at small expence<sup>1</sup>. Besides this, several great barons who perished in the Holy War, having left no heirs, their fiefs reverted of course to their respective sovereigns; and by these accessions of property as well as power taken from the one scale and thrown into the other, the regal authority increased in proportion as that of the Aristocracy declined. The absence, too, of many potent vassals, accustomed to controul and give law to their sovereigns, afforded them an opportunity of extending their prerogative, and of acquiring a degree of weight in the constitution which they did not formerly possess. To these circumstances, we may add, that as all who assumed the cross were taken under the immediate protection of the church, and its heaviest anathemas were denounced against such as should disquiet or annoy those who had devoted themselves to this service; the private quarrels and hostilities which banished tranquillity from a feudal kingdom were suspended or extinguished; a more general and steady administration

<sup>1</sup> Willelm. Malmſbur. Guibert. Abbas ap. Bongars. vol. i. 481.

SECT. I. of justice began to be introduced, and some advances were made towards the establishment of regular government in the several kingdoms of Europe<sup>m</sup> [O].

Their commercial effect.

THE commercial effects of the Crusades were not less considerable than those which I have already mentioned. The first armies under the standard of the cross, which Peter the hermit and Godfrey of Bouillon led through Germany and Hungary to Constantinople, suffered so much by the length of the march, as well as by the fierceness of the barbarous people who inhabited those countries, that it deterred others from taking the same route; so that rather than encounter so many dangers, they chose to go by sea. Venice, Genoa, and Pisa furnished the transports on which they embarked. The sum which these cities received merely for freight from such numerous armies was immense<sup>n</sup>. This, however, was but a small part of what they gained by the expeditions to the Holy Land; the Crusaders contracted with them for military stores and provisions; their fleets kept on the coast as the armies advanced by land; and supplying them with whatever was wanting, engrossed all the profits of that lucrative branch of commerce. The success which attended the arms of the Crusaders was productive of advantages

<sup>m</sup> Du Cange Glossar. voc. *Cruce signatus*. Guil. Abbas ap. Bongars. vol. i. 480. 482.

[O] NOTE XIV.

<sup>n</sup> Muratori Antiquit. Italic. medii ævi, vol. ii. 905.

still more permanent. There are charters yet extant, containing grants to the Venetians, Pisans, and Genoese of the most extensive immunities in the several settlements which the Christians made in Asia. All the commodities which they imported or exported are thereby exempted from every imposition; the property of entire suburbs in some of the maritime towns, and of large streets in others, is vested in them; and all questions arising among persons settled within their precincts, or who traded under their protection, are appointed to be tried by their own laws and by judges of their own appointment\*. When the Crusaders seized Constantinople, and placed one of their own leaders on the Imperial throne, the Italian States were likewise gainers by that event. The Venetians who had planned the enterprize, and took a considerable part in carrying it into execution, did not neglect to secure to themselves the chief advantages redounding from its success. They made themselves masters of part of the ancient Peloponnesus in Greece, together with some of the most fertile islands in the Archipelago. Many valuable branches of the commerce, which formerly centered in Constantinople, were transferred to Venice, Genoa, or Pisa. Thus a succession of events occasioned by the Holy War, opened various sources, from which wealth flowed in such

\* Muratori Antiquit. Italic. medii ævi, vol. ii. 906, &c.

SECT. I. abundance in these cities<sup>p</sup>, as enabled them, in concurrence with another institution which shall be immediately mentioned, to secure their own liberty and independence.

The establishment of communities favourable to government and order.

II. THE institution to which I alluded was the forming of cities into communities, corporations, or bodies politick, and granting them the privilege of municipal jurisdiction, which contributed more, perhaps, than any other cause to introduce regular government, police and arts, and to diffuse them over Europe. The feudal government had degenerated into a system of oppression. The usurpations of the nobles were become unbounded and intolerable: they had reduced the great body of the people into a state of actual servitude: the condition of those dignified with the name of freemen, was often little preferable to that of the other. Nor was such oppression the portion of those alone who dwelt in the country, and were employed in cultivating the estate of their master. Cities and villages held of some great lord, on whom they depended for protection, and were no less subject to his arbitrary jurisdiction. The inhabitants were deprived of the natural, and most unalienable rights of humanity. They could not dispose of the effects which their own industry had acquired, either by a latter will, or by any deed executed during

The ancient state of cities.

<sup>p</sup> Villehardouin hist. de Constant. sous l'Empereurs François, 105, &c.

their

their life<sup>a</sup>. They had no right to appoint guardians for their children during their minority. They were not permitted to marry without purchasing the consent of the lord on whom they depended<sup>b</sup>. If once they had commenced a law-suit, they durst not terminate it by an accommodation, because that would have deprived the lord in whose court they pleaded, of the perquisites due to him on passing sentence<sup>c</sup>. Services of various kinds, no less disgraceful than oppressive, were exacted from them without mercy or moderation. The spirit of industry was checked in some cities by absurd regulations, and in others by unreasonable exactions: nor would the narrow and oppressive maxims of a military aristocracy have permitted it ever to rise to any degree of height or vigour<sup>d</sup>.

BUT as soon as the cities of Italy began to turn their attention towards commerce, and to conceive some idea of the advantages which they might derive from it, they became impatient to shake off the yoke of their insolent lords, and to establish among themselves such a free and equal govern-

The freedom of cities first established in Italy.

<sup>a</sup> Dacherii Spiceleg. tom. xi. 374, 375. edit. in 4to. Ordonances des Rois de France, tom. iii. 204. N<sup>o</sup>. 2. 6.

<sup>b</sup> Ordonances des Rois de France, tom. i. p. 22. tom. iii. 203. N<sup>o</sup>. 1. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. iv. p. 20. Dacher. Spiceleg. vol. xi. 325. 341.

<sup>c</sup> Dacher. Spicel. vol. ix. 182.

<sup>d</sup> M. l'Abbè Mably observat. sur l'hist. de France, tom. ii. p. 2. 96.



SECT. I. ment as would render property secure, and industry flourishing. The German Emperors, especially those of the Franconian and Suabian lines, as the seat of their government was far distant from Italy, possessed a feeble and imperfect jurisdiction in that country. Their perpetual quarrels either with the Popes or with their own turbulent vassals, diverted their attention from the interior police of Italy, and gave constant employment to their arms. These circumstances encouraged the inhabitants of some of the Italian cities, towards the beginning of the eleventh century, to assume new privileges, to unite together more closely, and to form themselves into bodies politick under the government of laws established by common consent<sup>a</sup>. The rights, which many cities acquired by bold or fortunate usurpations, others purchased from the Emperors, who deemed themselves gainers when they received large sums for immunities which they were no longer able to withhold; and some cities obtained them gratuitously from the generosity or facility of the Princes on whom they depended. The great increase of wealth which the Crusades brought into Italy, occasioned a new kind of fermentation and activity in the minds of the people, and excited such a general passion for liberty and independence, that before the conclusion of the last Crusade, all the considerable cities in that country had either purchased or had extorted large immunities from the Emperors [P].

<sup>a</sup> Murat. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iv. p. 5.

[P] NOTE XV.



THIS innovation was not long known in Italy before it made its way into France. Louis the Gros, in order to create some power that might counterbalance those potent vassals who controuled, or gave law to the crown, first adopted the plan of conferring new privileges on the towns situated within his own domaine. These privileges were called *charters of community*, by which he enfranchised the inhabitants, abolished all marks of servitude, and formed them into corporations or bodies politick, to be governed by a council and magistrates of their own nomination. These magistrates had the right of administering justice within their own precincts, of levying taxes, of embodying and training to arms the militia of the town, which took the field when required by the sovereign, under the command of officers appointed by the community. The great barons imitated the example of their monarch, and granted like immunities to the towns within their territories. They had wasted such great sums in their expeditions to the Holy Land, that they were eager to lay hold on this new expedient for raising money, by the sale of those charters of liberty. Though the institution of communities was as repugnant to their maxims of policy, as it was adverse to their power, they disregarded remote consequences, in order to obtain present relief. In less than two centuries, servitude was abolished in most of the towns in France, and they became free corporations, instead of dependent villages, without jurisdiction or pri-

SECT. I.

Is introduced into France and into other countries of Europe.  
A.D. 1108.  
—1. 37.

SECT. I. vileges [Q]. Much about the same period, the great cities in Germany began to acquire like immunities, and laid the foundation of their present liberty and independence [R]. The practice spread quickly over Europe, and was adopted in Spain, England, Scotland, and all the other feudal kingdoms [S].

its happy  
effects upon  
the condi-  
tion of the  
inhabitants;

THE good effects of this new institution were immediately felt, and its influence on government as well as manners was no less extensive than salutary. A great body of the people was released from servitude, and from all the arbitrary and grievous impositions to which that wretched condition had subjected them. Towns, upon acquiring the right of community, became so many little republics, governed by known and equal laws. Liberty was deemed such an essential and characteristic part in their constitution, that if any slave took refuge in one of them, and resided there during a year without being claimed, he was instantly declared a freeman, and admitted as a member of the community<sup>w</sup>,

upon the  
power of the  
nobility ;

As one part of the people owed their liberty to the erection of communities, another was indebted to them for their security. Such had been the state of Europe during several centuries, that self-

[Q] NOTE XVI.

[R] NOTE XVII.

[S] NOTE XVIII.

<sup>w</sup> Statut. Humberti Bellojoci Dacher. Spicel. vol. ix. 182.  
185. Charta Comit. Forens. ibid. 193.

preservation

preservation obliged every man to court the patronage of some powerful baron, and in times of danger his castle was the place to which all resorted for safety. But towns surrounded with walls, whose inhabitants were regularly trained to arms, and bound by interest, as well as by the most solemn engagements, reciprocally to defend each other, afforded a more commodious and secure retreat. The nobles began to be considered as of less importance, when they ceased to be the sole guardians to whom the people could look up for protection against violence.

If the nobility suffered some diminution of their credit and power by the privileges granted to the cities, the crown acquired an increase of both. As there were no regular troops kept on foot in any of the feudal kingdoms, the Monarch could bring no army into the field but what was composed of soldiers furnished by the crown vassals, always jealous of the regal authority; nor had he any funds for carrying on the publick service, but such as they granted him with a very sparing hand. But when the members of communities were permitted to bear arms, and were trained to the use of these, this in some degree supplied the first defect, and gave the crown the command of a body of men independent of its great vassals. The attachment of the cities to their sovereigns, whom they respected as the first authors of their liberties, and whom they were obliged to court as the protectors

of

SECT. I. of their immunities against the domineering spirit of the nobles, contributed somewhat towards removing the second evil, as, on many occasions, it procured the crown supplies of money which added new force to government \*.

upon the  
increase of  
industry.

THE acquisition of liberty made such a happy change in the condition of all the members of communities, as roused them from that inaction into which they had been sunk by the wretchedness of their former state. The spirit of industry revived. Commerce became an object of attention, and began to flourish. Population increased. Independence was established; and wealth flowed into cities which had long been the seat of poverty and oppression. Wealth was accompanied by its usual attendants, ostentation and luxury; and though the former was inelegant and cumbersome, and the latter indelicate, they led gradually to greater refinement in manners, and in the habits of life. Together with this improvement in manners, a more regular species of government and police was introduced. As cities grew to be more populous, and the occasions of intercourse among men increased, statutes and regulations multiplied of course, and all became sensible that their common safety depended on observing them with exactness, and on punishing such as violated them, with promptitude and rigour. Laws and subordi-

\* Ordon. des Rois de France, tom. i. 602. 785. tom. ii. 318. 422.

nation, as well as polished manners, taking their rise in cities, diffused themselves insensibly through the rest of the society. SECT. I.

III. THE inhabitants of cities having obtained personal freedom and municipal jurisdiction, soon acquired civil liberty and political power. It was a fundamental principle in the feudal system of policy, that no freeman could be governed or taxed unless by his own consent. In consequence of this, the vassals of every baron were called to his court, in which they established, by mutual consent, such regulations as they deemed most beneficial to their small society, and granted their superior such supplies of money, as were proportional to their abilities, or to his wants. The barons themselves, conformably to the same maxim, were admitted into the supreme assembly of the nation, and concurred with the sovereign in enacting laws, or in imposing taxes. As the superior lord, according to the original plan of feudal policy, retained the direct property of those lands which he granted, in temporary possession, to his vassals, the law, even after fiefs became hereditary, still supposed this original practice to subsist, and a baron continued to be considered as the guardian of all who resided within his territories. The great council of each nation, whether distinguished by the name of a parliament, a diet, the Cortes, or the states-general, was composed entirely of such barons, and dignified ecclesiasticks, as held immediately of the

The inhabitants of cities acquire political power as members of the constitution.

**SECT. I.** the crown. Towns, whether situated within the royal domaine, or on the lands of a subject, depended for protection on the lord of whom they held. They had no legal name, no political existence, which could entitle them to be admitted into the legislative assembly, or could give them any authority there. But as soon as they were enfranchised, and formed into Bodies Corporate, they became legal and independent members of the constitution, and acquired all the rights essential to freemen. Amongst these, the most valuable, was the privilege of a decisive voice in enacting publick laws, and granting national subsidies. It was natural for cities, accustomed to a form of municipal government, according to which no regulation could be established within the community, and no money could be raised but by their own consent, to claim this privilege. The wealth, the power and consideration which they acquired on recovering their liberty, added weight to their claim; and favourable events happened, or fortunate conjunctures occurred in the different kingdoms of Europe, which facilitated or forwarded their obtaining possession of this important right. In England, one of the first countries in which the representatives of boroughs were admitted into the great council of the nation, the

A.D. 1265. barons who took arms against Henry III. summoned them to attend parliament in order to add greater popularity to their party, and to strengthen the barrier against the encroachment of regal power. In France, Philip the Fair, a Monarch no less sagacious

cious than enterprizing, considered them as instruments which might be employed with equal advantage to extend the royal prerogative, to counterbalance the exorbitant power of the nobles, and to facilitate the imposition of new taxes. With these views, he introduced the deputies of such towns as were formed into communities into the states-general of the nation<sup>y</sup>. In the Empire, the wealth and immunities of the Imperial cities placed them on a level with the most considerable members of the Germanick body. Conscious of their own power and dignity, they pretended to the privilege of forming a separate bench in the diet; and made good their pretension<sup>z</sup>. SECT. I.

BUT in what way soever the representatives of cities first gained a place in the legislature, that event had great influence on the form and genius of government. The happy effects of this upon government. It tempered the rigour of aristocratical oppression, with a proper mixture of popular liberty: It secured to the great body of the people, who had formerly no representatives, active and powerful guardians of their rights and privileges: It established an intermediate power between the King and nobles, to which each had recourse alternately, and which at some times opposed the usurpations of the former, on other occasions checked the encroachments of the latter. As soon

<sup>y</sup> Pasquier Recherches de la France, p. 81. edit. Par. 1633.

<sup>z</sup> Pfeffel Abregé de l'histoire & droit d'Allemagne, p. 408.



**SECT. I.** as the representatives of communities gained any degree of credit and influence in the legislature, the spirit of laws became different from what it had formerly been ; it flowed from new principles ; it was directed towards new objects ; equality, order, the publick good, and the redress of grievances, were phrases and ideas brought into use, and which grew to be familiar in the statutes and jurisprudence of the European nations. Almost all the efforts in favour of liberty in every country of Europe, have been made by this new power in the legislature. In proportion as it rose to consideration and influence, the severity of the aristocratical spirit decreased ; and the privileges of the people became gradually more extensive as the ancient and exorbitant jurisdiction of the nobles was abridged [T].

The people  
acquire li-  
berty by en-  
franchise-  
ment.

**IV.** THE inhabitants of towns having been declared free by the charters of communities, that part of the people which resided in the country, and was employed in agriculture, began to recover liberty by enfranchisement. During the rigour of feudal government, as hath been already observed, the great body of the lower people was reduced to servitude. They were slaves fixed to the soil which they cultivated, and together with it were transferred from one proprietor to another, by sale, or by conveyance. The spirit of feudal policy did not favour the enfranchisement of that order of men. It was an established maxim, that no vassal

[T] NOTE XIX.

could



could legally diminish the value of a fief, to the detriment of the lord from whom he had received it. In consequence of this, manumission by the authority of the immediate master was not valid : and unless it was confirmed by the superior lord of whom he held, slaves belonging to the fief did not acquire a complete right to their liberty. Thus it became necessary to ascend through all the gradations of feudal holding to the King, the lord Paramount<sup>a</sup>. A form of procedure so tedious and troublesome, discouraged the practice of manumission. Domestic or personal slaves often obtained liberty from the humanity or beneficence of their masters, to whom they belonged in absolute property. The condition of slaves fixed to the soil, was much more unalterable.

SECT. I.

BUT the freedom and independence which one part of the people had obtained by the institution of communities, inspired the other with the most ardent desire of acquiring the same privileges ; and their superiors, sensible of the benefits which they themselves had derived from former concessions, were less unwilling to gratify them by the grant of new immunities. The enfranchisement of slaves became more frequent ; and the Monarchs of France, prompted by necessity no less than by their inclination to reduce the power of the nobles, endeavoured to render it general. Louis X. and his brother Philip, issued ordinances, declaring,

The motives and progress of this.

A. D. 1315, and 1318.

<sup>a</sup> Etablissements de St. Louis, liv. ii. ch. 34. Ordon, tom. i. 283. not. (a).

“ That

SECT. I. "That as all men were by nature free-born, and as their kingdom was called the kingdom of Franks, they determined that it should be so in reality as well as in name; therefore they appointed that enfranchisements should be granted throughout the whole kingdom, upon just and reasonable conditions<sup>b</sup>." These edicts were carried into immediate execution within the royal domaine. The example of their sovereigns, together with the expectation of considerable sums which they might raise by this expedient, led many of the nobles to set their dependents at liberty; and servitude was gradually abolished in almost every province of the kingdom [U]. In Italy, the establishment of republican government in their great cities, the genius and maxims of which were extremely different from those of the feudal policy, together with the ideas of equality, which the progress of commerce had rendered familiar, gradually introduced the practice of enfranchising the ancient *predial* slaves. In some provinces of Germany, the persons who had been subject to this species of bondage, were released; in others, the rigour of their state was mitigated. In England, as the spirit of liberty gained ground, the very name and idea of personal servitude, without any formal interposition of the legislature to prohibit it, was totally banished.

<sup>b</sup> Ordon. tom. i. p. 583, 653.

[U] NOTE XX.

THE effects of such a remarkable change in the condition of so great a part of the people, could not fail of being considerable and extensive. The husbandman, master of his own industry, and secure of reaping for himself the fruits of his labour, became the farmer of the same fields where he had formerly been compelled to toil for the benefit of another. The odious names of master and of slave, the most mortifying and depressing of all distinctions to human nature, were abolished. New prospects opened, and new incitements to ingenuity and enterprize presented themselves to those who were emancipated. The expectation of bettering their fortune, as well as that of raising themselves to a more honourable condition, concurred in calling forth their activity and genius; and a numerous class of men, who formerly had no political existence, and were employed merely as instruments of labour, became useful citizens, and contributed towards augmenting the force or riches of the society, which adopted them as members.

SECT. I.  
The effects  
of this upon  
the im-  
provement  
of society.

V. THE various expedients which were employed in order to introduce a more regular, equal, and vigorous administration of justice, contributed greatly towards the improvement of society. What was the particular mode of dispensing justice in the several barbarous nations which over-ran the Roman Empire, and took possession of its different provinces, cannot now be determined with certainty. We may conclude from the form of government established among them, as well as from

The intro-  
duction of  
a more regu-  
lar admini-  
stration of  
justice, con-  
tributes to  
the im-  
provement  
of society.

SECT. I. their ideas concerning the nature of society, that the authority of the magistrate was extremely limited, and the independence of individuals proportionally great. History and records, as far as these reach back, justify this conclusion, and represent the ideas and exercise of justice in all the countries of Europe, as little different from those which must take place in a state of nature. To maintain the order and tranquillity of society by the regular execution of known laws; to inflict vengeance on crimes destructive of the peace and safety of individuals, by a prosecution carried on in the name, and by the authority of the community; to consider the punishment of criminals as a public example to deter others from violating the laws; were objects of government little understood in theory, and less regarded in practice. The magistrate could hardly be said to hold the sword of justice; it was left in the hands of private persons. Resentment was almost the sole motive for prosecuting crimes; and to gratify that passion, was the end and rule in punishing them. He who suffered the wrong, was the only person who had a right to pursue the aggressor, and to exact or to remit the punishment. From a system of judicial procedure, so crude and defective as seems to be scarcely compatible with the subsistence of civil society, disorder and anarchy flowed. Superstition concurred with this ignorance concerning the nature of government, in obstructing the administration of justice, or in rendering it capricious and unequal. To provide remedies for these evils, so

as to give a more regular course to justice, was, SECT. I.  
 during several centuries, one great object of political wisdom. The regulations for this purpose may be reduced to three general heads: To explain these, and to point out the manner in which they operated, is an important article in the history of society among the nations of Europe.

1. THE first considerable step towards establishing an equal administration of justice, was the abolishment of the right which individuals claimed of waging war with each other, in their own name, and by their own authority. To repel injuries, and to revenge wrongs, is no less natural to man than to cultivate friendship: and while society remains in its most simple state, the former is considered as a personal right no less unalienable than the latter. This effected by abolishing the practice of private war. Nor do men in this situation deem that they have a title to redress their own wrongs alone; they are touched with the injuries of those with whom they are connected, or in whose honour they are interested; and are no less prompt to avenge them. The savage, how imperfectly soever he may comprehend the principles of political union, feels warmly the sentiments of social affection, and the obligations arising from the ties of blood. On the appearance of an injury or affront offered to his family or tribe, he kindles into rage, and pursues the authors of it with the keenest resentment. He considers it as cowardly to expect redress from any arm but his own, and as infamous to give up to another the right of determining what repara-

Original ideas of men concerning justice.

SECT. I. tion he should accept, or with what vengeance he should rest satisfied.

These lead  
to the prac-  
tice of pri-  
vate war.

THE maxims and practice of all uncivilized nations, with respect to the prosecution and punishment of offenders, particularly those of the ancient Germans, and other Barbarians who invaded the Roman Empire, are perfectly conformable to these ideas<sup>c</sup>. While they retained their native simplicity of manners, and continued to be divided into small tribes or societies, the defects in this imperfect system of criminal jurisprudence (if it merits that name) were less sensibly felt. When they came to settle in the extensive provinces which they had conquered, and to form themselves into great monarchies; when new objects of ambition presenting themselves, increased both the number and the violence of their dissensions, they ought to have adopted new maxims concerning the redress of injuries, and to have regulated by general and equal laws, that which they formerly left to be directed by the caprice of private passion. But fierce and haughty chieftains, accustomed to avenge themselves on such as had injured them, did not think of relinquishing a right which they considered as a privilege of their order, and a mark of their independence. Laws enforced by the authority of Princes and Magistrates who possessed little power, commanded no great degree of reverence. The administration of justice among rude

<sup>c</sup> Tacit. de Mor. German. cap. 21. Vell. Patere. lib. ii. c. 118.



illiterate people, was not so accurate, or decisive, or uniform, as to induce men to submit implicitly to its determinations. Every offended baron buckled on his armour, and sought redress at the head of his vassals. His adversary met him in like hostile array. Neither of them appealed to impotent laws, which could afford them no protection. Neither of them would submit points, in which their passions were warmly interested, to the slow determination of a judicial enquiry. Both trusted to their swords for the decision of the contest. The kindred and dependents of the aggressor, as well as of the defender, were involved in the quarrel. They had not even the liberty of remaining neutral. Such as refused to act in concert with the party to which they belonged, were not only exposed to infamy, but subjected to legal penalties.

THE different kingdoms of Europe were torn and afflicted, during several centuries, by intestine wars, excited by private animosities, and carried on with all the rage natural to men of fierce manners, and of violent passions. The estate of every baron was a kind of independent territory, disjoined from those around it, and the hostilities between them were perpetual. The evil became so inveterate and deep-rooted, that the form and laws of private war were ascertained, and regulations concerning it made a part in the system of jurisprudence<sup>d</sup>, in the same manner as if this practice

The pernicious effects of it.

<sup>d</sup> Beaumanoir *Coutumes de Beauvoisis*, ch. 59, et les notes de Thaumassiere, p. 447.



SECT. I. had been founded in some natural right of humanity, or in the original constitution of civil society.

Various methods employed in order to abolish it.

So great was the disorder, and such the calamities which these perpetual hostilities occasioned, that various efforts were made to wrest from the nobles this pernicious privilege which they claimed. It was the interest of every sovereign to abolish a practice which almost annihilated his authority. Charlemagne prohibited it by an express law, as an invention of the devil to destroy the order and happiness of society<sup>c</sup>; but the reign of one Monarch, however vigorous and active, was too short to extirpate a custom so firmly established. Instead of enforcing this prohibition, his feeble successors durst venture on nothing more than to apply palliatives. They declared it unlawful for any person to commence war, until he had sent a formal defiance to the kindred and dependents of his adversary; they ordained that, after the commission of the trespass or crime which gave rise to a private war, forty days must elapse before the person injured should attack the vassals of his adversary; they enjoined all persons to suspend their private animosities, and to cease from hostilities when the King was engaged in any war against the enemies of the nation. The church co-operated with the civil magistrate, and interposed its authority in order to extirpate a practice so repugnant to the spirit of Christianity. Various councils issued decrees, prohibiting all private wars; and

<sup>c</sup> Capitul. A. D. 801. Edit. Baluz. Vol. i. p. 371.

denounced

denounced the heaviest anathemas against such as should disturb the tranquillity of society, by claiming or exercising that barbarous right. The aid of religion was called in to combat and subdue the ferocity of the times. The Almighty was said to have manifested, by visions and revelations to different persons, his disapprobation of that spirit of revenge, which armed one part of his creatures against the other. Men were required, in the name of God, to sheath their swords, and to remember the sacred ties which united them as Christians, and as members of the same society. But this junction of civil and ecclesiastick authority, though strengthened by every thing most apt to alarm and to overawe the credulous spirit of those ages, produced no other effect than some temporary suspensions of hostilities, and a cessation from war on certain days and seasons consecrated to the more solemn acts of devotion. The nobles continued to assert this dangerous privilege; they refused to obey some of the laws calculated to annul or circumscribe it; they eluded others; they petitioned; they remonstrated; they struggled for the right of private war as the highest and most honourable distinction of their order. Even so late as the fourteenth century, we find the nobles in several provinces of France contending for their ancient method of terminating their differences by the sword, in preference to that of submitting them to the decision of any judge. The final abolition of this practice in that kingdom, and the other countries in which it prevailed, is not to be ascribed so much to the force of sta-

**SECT. I.** tutes and decrees, as to the gradual increase of the royal authority, and to the imperceptible progress of juster sentiments concerning government, order, and public security [X].

The prohibition of trial by judicial combat, another improvement in the administration of justice.

Defects in the judicial proceedings of the middle ages.

2. THE prohibition of the form of trial by judicial combat, was another considerable step towards the introduction of such regular government as secured publick order and private tranquillity. As the right of private war left many of the quarrels among individuals to be decided, like those between nations, by arms; the form of trial by judicial combat, which was established in every country of Europe, banished equity from courts of justice, and rendered chance or force the arbiter of their determinations. In civilized nations, all transactions of any importance are concluded in writing. The exhibition of the deed or instrument is full evidence of the fact, and ascertains with precision what each party has stipulated to perform. But among a rude people, when the arts of reading and writing were such uncommon attainments, that to be master of either, intitled a person to the appellation of a clerk or learned man, scarcely any thing was committed to writing but treaties between Princes, their grants and charters to their subjects, or such transactions between private parties as were of extraordinary consequence, or had an extensive effect. The greater part of affairs in common life and business, were carried on by verbal con-

tracts or promises. This, in many civil questions, not only made it difficult to bring proof sufficient to establish any claim, but encouraged falsehood and fraud by rendering them extremely easy. Even in criminal cases, where a particular fact must be ascertained, or an accusation be disproved, the nature and effect of legal evidence was little understood by barbarous nations. To define with accuracy that species of evidence which a court had reason to expect; to determine when it ought to insist on positive proof, and when it should be satisfied with a proof from circumstances; to compare the testimony of discordant witnesses; and to fix the degree of credit due to each; were discussions too intricate and subtle for the jurisprudence of ignorant ages. In order to avoid encumbering themselves with these, a more simple form of procedure was introduced into courts as well civil as criminal. In all cases, where the notoriety of the fact did not furnish the clearest and most direct evidence, the person accused, or he against whom an action was brought, was called legally, or offered voluntarily to purge himself by oath; and upon his declaring his innocence, he was instantly acquitted<sup>f</sup>. This absurd practice effectually screened guilt and fraud from detection or punishment, by rendering the temptation to perjury so powerful, that it was not easy to resist it. The pernicious effects of it were sensibly felt; and in order to guard

<sup>f</sup> Leg. Burgund. Tit. 8, & 45. Leg. Aleman. Tit. 89. Leg. Baiwar. Tit. 8. § 5. 2. &c,

SECT. I. against them, the laws ordained, that oaths should be administered with great solemnity, and accompanied with every circumstance which could inspire religious reverence, or superstitious terror<sup>g</sup>. This, however, proved a feeble remedy: these ceremonious rites became familiar, and their impression on the imagination gradually diminished; men who could venture to disregard truth, were not apt to startle at the solemnities of an oath. Their observation of this, put legislators upon devising a new expedient for rendering the purgation by oath more certain and satisfactory. They required the person accused to appear with a certain number of freemen, his neighbours or relations, who corroborated the oath which he took, by swearing that they believed all that he had uttered to be true. These were called *Compurgators*, and their number varied according to the importance of the subject in dispute, or the nature of the crime with which a person was charged<sup>h</sup>. In some cases, the concurrence of no less than three hundred of these auxiliary witnesses was requisite to acquit the person accused<sup>i</sup>. But even this device was found to be ineffectual. It was a point of honour with every man in Europe, during several ages, not to desert the chief on whom he depended, and to stand by those with whom the ties of blood connected him. Whoever then was bold enough to violate

<sup>g</sup> Du Cange Glossar. voc. *Juramentum*, vol. iii. p. 1607. Edit. Benedict.

<sup>h</sup> Du Cange, *ibid.* vol. iii. p. 1599.

<sup>i</sup> Spelman Glossar. voc. *Affath*. Gregor. Turon. Hist. lib. viii. c. 9.

the laws, was sure of devoted adherents, willing to abet, and eager to serve him in whatever manner he required. The formality of calling Compurgators, proved an apparent, not a real security, against falsehood and perjury; and the sentences of courts, while they continued to refer every point in question to the oath of the defendant, became so flagrantly iniquitous as excited universal indignation against this method of procedure<sup>k</sup>.

SECT. I.

SENSIBLE of these defects, but strangers to the manner of correcting them, or of introducing a more proper form, our ancestors, as an infallible method of discovering truth, and of guarding against deception, appealed to Heaven, and referred every point in dispute to be determined, as they imagined, by the decisions of unerring wisdom and impartial justice. The person accused, in order to prove his innocence, submitted, in some cases, to trial, by plunging his arm in boiling water; by lifting a red-hot iron with his naked hand; by walking bare-foot over burning plough-shares; or by other experiments equally perilous and formidable. On other occasions, he challenged his accuser to fight him in single combat. All these various forms of trial were conducted with many devout ceremonies; the ministers of religion were employed, the Almighty was called upon to interpose for the manifestation of guilt, and for the protection of innocence; and whoever escaped unhurt, or came off victorious,

These introduced the practice of appealing to heaven.

Particularly by judicial combat.

<sup>k</sup> Leg. Langobard. lib. ii. tit. 55. § 34.



SECT. I. was pronounced to be acquitted by the *Judgment*  
 of God<sup>1</sup>.

The introduction of this practice favoured by the superstition of the middle ages;

AMONG all the whimsical and absurd institutions which owe their existence to the weakness of human reason, this, which submitted questions that affected the property, the reputation, and the lives of men, to the determination of chance, or of bodily strength and address, appears to be the most extravagant and preposterous. There were circumstances, however, which led the nations of Europe to consider this equivocal mode of deciding any point in contest, as a direct appeal to Heaven, and a certain method of discovering its will. As men are unable to comprehend the manner in which the Almighty carries on the government of the universe, by equal, fixed, and general laws, they are apt to imagine, that in every case which their passions or interest render important in their own eyes, the Supreme Ruler of all ought visibly to display his power, in vindicating innocence and punishing vice. It requires no inconsiderable degree of science and philosophy to correct this popular error. But the sentiments prevalent in Europe during the dark ages, instead of correcting, strengthened it. Religion, for several centuries, consisted chiefly in believing the legendary history of those saints whose names croud and disgrace the Romish calendar. The fabulous tales concerning their miracles, had been declared authentick by the bulls of Popes, and

<sup>1</sup> Murat, *Dissertatio de judiciis Dei*. Antiquit. Italic. vol. iii. p. 612,



the decrees of councils; they made the great sub-  
 ject of the instructions which the clergy offered to  
 the people, and were received by them with im-  
 plicit credulity and admiration. By attending to  
 these, men were accustomed to believe that the  
 established laws of nature might be violated on the  
 most frivolous occasions, and were taught to look  
 rather for particular and extraordinary acts of  
 power under the divine administration, than to  
 contemplate the regular progress and execution of  
 a general plan. One superstition prepared the way  
 for another; and whoever believed that the Su-  
 preme Being had interposed miraculously on those  
 trivial occasions mentioned in legends, could not  
 but expect his intervention in matters of greater  
 importance, when solemnly referred to his decision.

SECT. I.

WITH this superstitious opinion, the martial  
 spirit of Europe, during the middle ages, concurred  
 in establishing the mode of trial by judicial com-  
 bat. To be ready to maintain with his sword  
 whatever his lips had uttered, was the first maxim  
 of honour with every gentleman. To assert their  
 own rights by force of arms, to inflict vengeance  
 on those who had injured or affronted them, were  
 the distinction and pride of high-spirited nobles.  
 The form of trial by combat coinciding with this  
 maxim, flattered and gratified these passions. Every  
 man was the guardian of his own honour, and of  
 his own life; the justice of his cause, as well as his  
 future reputation, depended on his own courage  
 and prowess. This mode of decision was con-  
 sidered,

and like-  
 wise by  
 their mar-  
 tial spirit.

SECT. I. sidered, accordingly, as one of the happiest efforts of wise policy; and as soon as it was introduced, all the forms of trial by fire or water, and other superstitious experiments, fell into disuse, or were employed only in controversies between persons of inferior rank. The trial by combat was authorized over all Europe, and received in every country with equal satisfaction. Not only questions concerning uncertain or contested facts, but general and abstract points in law, were determined by the issue of a combat; and the latter was deemed a method of discovering truth more liberal as well as more satisfactory, than that by examination and argument. Not only might parties, whose minds were exasperated by the eagerness and the hostility of opposition, defy their antagonist, and require him to make good his charge, or to prove his innocence, with his sword; but witnesses, who had no interest in the issue of the question, though called to declare the truth by laws which ought to have afforded them protection, were equally exposed to the danger of a challenge, and equally bound to assert the veracity of their evidence by dint of arms. To complete the absurdities of this military jurisprudence, even the character of a judge was not sacred from its violence. Any one of the parties might interrupt a judge when about to deliver his opinion; might accuse him of iniquity and corruption in the most reproachful terms, and throwing down his gauntlet, might challenge him to defend his integrity in the field; nor could he, without infamy, refuse

to accept the defiance, or decline to enter the lists SECT. I.  
 against such an adversary.

THUS the form of trial by combat, like other abuses, spread gradually, and extended to all persons, and almost to all cases. Ecclesiasticks, women, minors, superannuated and infirm persons, who could not with decency or justice be compelled to take arms, and to maintain their own cause, were obliged to produce champions, whom they engaged, by affection or rewards, to fight their battles. The solemnities of a judicial combat were such as were natural in an action, which was considered both as a formal appeal to God, and as the final decision of questions of the highest moment. Every circumstance relating to them, was regulated by the edicts of Princes, and explained in the comments of lawyers, with a minute and even superstitious accuracy. Skill in these laws and rites was the only science of which warlike nobles boasted, or which they were ambitious to attain <sup>m</sup>.

It becomes  
universal.

By this barbarous custom, the natural course of proceeding, both in civil and criminal questions, was entirely perverted. Force usurped the place of equity in courts of judicature, and justice was banished from her proper mansion. Discernment, learning, integrity, were qualities less necessary to a judge, than bodily strength and dexterity in the

The pernicious effects  
of it,

<sup>m</sup> See a curious discourse concerning the laws of judicial combat, by Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester, uncle to Richard II. in Spelman's Glossar. voc. *Campus*.

SECT. I. use of arms. Daring courage, and superior vigour or address, were of more moment towards securing the favourable issue of a suit, than the equity of a cause, or the clearness of the evidence. Men, of course, applied themselves to cultivate the talents which they found to be of greatest utility. As strength of body and address in arms were no less requisite in those lists which they were obliged to enter in defence of their private rights, than in the field of battle, where they met the enemies of their country, it became the great object of education, as well as the chief employment in life, to acquire these martial accomplishments. The administration of justice, instead of accustoming men to listen to the voice of equity, or to reverence the decisions of law, added to the ferocity of their manners, and taught them to consider force as the great arbiter of right and wrong.

Various expedients for abolishing this practice.

THESE pernicious effects of the trial by combat were so obvious, that they did not altogether escape the view of the unobserving age in which it was introduced. The clergy, from the beginning, remonstrated against it as repugnant to the spirit of Christianity, and subversive of justice and order<sup>n</sup>. But the maxims and passions which favoured it, had taken such hold of the minds of men, that they disregarded admonitions and censures, which, on other occasions, would have struck them with terror. The evil was too great and inveterate to yield to that remedy, and continuing to increase,

<sup>n</sup> Du Cange Glossar. voc. *Duellum*, vol. ii. p. 1675.

the civil power at length found it necessary to interpose. Conscious, however, of their own limited authority, monarchs proceeded with caution, and their first attempts to restrain, or to set any bounds to this practice, were extremely feeble. One of the earliest restrictions of this practice which occurs in the history of Europe, is that of Henry I. of England. It extended no farther than to prohibit the trial by combat in questions concerning property of small value<sup>o</sup>. Louis VII. of France imitated his example, and issued an edict to the same effect<sup>p</sup>. St. Louis, whose ideas as a legislator were far superior to those of his age, endeavoured to introduce a more perfect jurisprudence, and to substitute the trial by evidence, in place of that by combat. But his regulations, with respect to this, were confined to his own domains; for the great vassals of the crown possessed such independent authority, and were so fondly attached to the ancient practice, that he durst not venture to extend it to the whole kingdom. Some barons voluntarily adopted his regulations. The spirit of courts of justice became averse to the mode of decision by combat, and discouraged it on every occasion. The nobles, nevertheless, thought it so honourable to depend for the security of their lives and fortunes on their own courage alone, and contended with so much vehemence for the preservation of this favourite privilege of their order, that the suc-

<sup>o</sup> Brussel Usage des Fiefs, vol. ii. p. 962.

<sup>p</sup> Ordon. tom. i. p. 16.

SECT. I. cessors of St. Louis, unable to oppose, and afraid of offending such powerful subjects, were obliged not only to tolerate, but to authorize the practice which he had attempted to abolish<sup>a</sup>. In other countries of Europe, efforts equally zealous were employed to maintain the established custom; and similar concessions were extorted from their respective sovereigns. It continued, however, to be an object of policy with every monarch of abilities or vigour, to explode the trial by combat; and various edicts were issued for this purpose. But the observation which was made concerning the right of private war, is equally applicable to the mode of trial under review. No custom, how absurd soever it may be, if it has subsisted long, or derives its force from the manners and prejudices of the age in which it prevails, was ever abolished by the bare promulgation of laws and statutes. The sentiments of the people must change, or some new power sufficient to counteract it must be introduced. Such a change, accordingly, took place in Europe, as science gradually increased, and society advanced towards more perfect order. In proportion as the prerogative of Princes extended, and came to acquire new force, a power, interested in suppressing every practice favourable to the independence of the nobles, was introduced. The struggle, nevertheless, subsisted for several centuries; sometimes the new regulations and ideas seemed to gain ground; sometimes ancient habits recurred; and though, upon the whole, the trial

<sup>a</sup> Ordon. tom. i. p. 328. 390. 435.



by combat went more and more into disuse, yet SECT. I.  
 instances of it occur, as late as the sixteenth century, in the history both of France and of England. In proportion as it declined, the regular administration of justice was restored, the proceedings of courts were directed by known laws, the study of these became an object of attention to judges, and the people of Europe advanced fast towards civility, when this great cause of the ferocity of their manners was removed [Y].

3. By authorizing the right of appeal from the courts of the Barons to those of the King, and subjecting the decisions of the former to the review of the latter, a new step, not less considerable than those which I have already mentioned, was taken towards establishing the regular, consistent, and vigorous administration of justice. Among all the encroachments of the feudal nobles on the prerogative of their Monarchs, their usurping the administration of justice with supreme authority, both in civil and criminal causes, within the precincts of their own estates, was the most singular. In other nations, subjects have contended with their Princes, and have endeavoured to extend their own power and privileges; but in the history of their struggles and pretensions, we discover nothing similar to this right which the feudal barons claimed, and acquired. It must have been something peculiar in their genius and manners that suggested this idea, and prompted

The privilege of appealing from the courts of the barons, another great improvement in the administration of justice.

Origin of the supreme and independent jurisdiction of the nobility.

[Y] NOTE XXII.

F 2

them



SECT. I. them to insist on such a claim. Among the rude people who conquered the various provinces of the Roman Empire, and established new kingdoms there, the passion of resentment, too impetuous to bear controul, was permitted to remain almost unrestrained by the authority of laws. The person offended, as has been observed, retained not only the right of prosecuting but of punishing his adversary. To him it belonged to inflict such vengeance as satiated his rage, or to accept of such satisfaction as appeased it. But while fierce barbarians continued to be the sole judges in their own cause, their enmities were implacable, and immortal; they set no bounds either to the degree of their vengeance, or to the duration of their resentment. The excesses which this occasioned, proved so destructive of peace and order in society, as forced them to think of some remedy. At first, arbiters interposed, and by persuasion or intreaty prevailed on the party offended to accept of a fine or composition from the aggressor, and to drop all farther prosecution. But as submission to persons who had no legal or magisterial authority was altogether voluntary, it became necessary to establish judges with power sufficient to enforce their own decisions. The leader whom they were accustomed to follow and to obey, whose courage they respected, and in whose integrity they placed confidence, was the person to whom a martial people naturally committed this important prerogative. Every chieftain was the commander of his tribe in war, and their  
judge

judge in peace. Every baron led his vassals to SECT. I.  
 the field, and administered justice to them in his  
 hall. Their high-spirited dependents would not  
 have recognized any other authority, or have sub-  
 mitted to any other jurisdiction. But in times of  
 turbulence and violence, the exercise of this new  
 function was attended not only with trouble, but  
 with danger. No person could assume the cha-  
 racter of a judge, if he did not possess power suf-  
 ficient to protect the one party from the violence  
 of private revenge, and to compel the other to  
 accept of such réparation as he enjoined. In con-  
 sideration of the extraordinary efforts which this  
 office required, judges, besides the fine which they  
 appointed to be paid as a compensation to the  
 person or family who had been injured, levied an  
 additional sum as a recompence for their own  
 labour; and in all the feudal kingdoms the latter  
 was not only as precisely ascertained, but as regu-  
 larly exacted, as the former.

THUS, by the natural operation of circumstances The extent  
and bad ef-  
fects of this  
privilege.  
 peculiar to the manners or political state of the  
 feudal nations, separate and territorial jurisdictions  
 came not only to be established in every kingdom,  
 but were established in such a way, that the in-  
 terest of the barons concurred with their ambition  
 in maintaining and extending them. It was not  
 merely a point of honour with the feudal nobles  
 to dispense justice to their vassals; but from the  
 exercise of that power arose one capital branch of  
 their revenue; and the emoluments of their courts

SECT. I. were frequently the main support of their dignity.

It was with infinite zeal that they asserted and defended this high privilege of their order. By this institution, however, every kingdom in Europe was split into as many separate principalities as it contained powerful barons. Their vassals, whether in peace or in war, were hardly sensible of any authority, but that of their superior lord. They felt themselves subject to no other command. They were amenable to no other jurisdiction. The ties which linked together these smaller confederacies became close and firm; the bonds of public union relaxed, or were dissolved. The nobles strained their invention in devising regulations which tended to ascertain and perpetuate this distinction. In order to guard against any appearance of subordination in their courts to those of the crown, they constrained their monarchs to prohibit the royal judges from entering their territories, or from claiming any jurisdiction there; and if, either through mistake, or from the spirit of encroachment, any royal judge ventured to extend his authority to the vassals of a baron, they might plead their right of exemption, and the lord of whom they held could not only rescue them out of his hands, but was intitled to legal reparation for the injury and affront offered to him. The jurisdiction of the royal judges scarcely reached beyond the narrow limits of the King's demesnes. Instead of a regular gradation of courts, all acknowledging the authority of the same general laws, and looking up to these

as the guides of their decisions, there were in every feudal kingdom a thousand independent tribunals, the proceedings of which were directed by local customs and contradictory forms. The collision of jurisdiction among these numerous courts often retarded the execution of justice: The variety and caprice of their modes of procedure must have for ever kept the administration of it from attaining any degree of uniformity or perfection.

SECT. I.

Expedients  
employed in  
order to li-  
mit or abo-  
lish it.

ALL the monarchs of Europe perceived these encroachments on their jurisdiction, and bore them with impatience. But the usurpations of the nobles were so firmly established, and the danger of endeavouring to overturn them by open force was so manifest, that they were obliged to remain satisfied with attempts to undermine them. Various expedients were employed for this purpose; each of which merit attention, as they mark the progress of law and equity in the several kingdoms of Europe. At first, Princes endeavoured to circumscribe the jurisdiction of the barons, by permitting them to take cognizance only of smaller offences, reserving those of greater moment, under the appellation of *Pleas of the Crown*, and *Royal Causes*, to be tried in the King's courts. This affected only the barons of inferior note; the more powerful nobles scorned such a distinction, and not only claimed unlimited jurisdiction, but obliged their sovereigns to grant them charters, conveying or recognizing this privilege in the most

SECT. I. ample form. The attempt, nevertheless, was productive of some good consequences, and paved the way for more. It turned the attention of men towards a jurisdiction distinct from that of the baron whose vassals they were; it accustomed them to the pretensions of superiority which the crown claimed over territorial judges; and taught them, when oppressed by their own superior lord, to look up to their sovereign as their protector. This facilitated the introduction of appeals, by which Princes brought the decisions of the barons' courts under the review of the royal judges. While trial by combat subsisted in full vigour, no point decided according to that mode, could be brought under the review of another court. It had been referred to the judgment of God; the issue of battle had declared his will; and it would have been impious to have called in question the equity of the divine decision. But as soon as that barbarous custom began to fall into disuse, Princes encouraged the vassals of the barons to sue for redress, by appealing to the royal courts. The progress of this practice, however, was slow and gradual. The first instances of appeals were on account of *the delay*, or *the refusal of justice* in the baron's court; and as these were countenanced by the ideas of subordination in the feudal constitution, the nobles allowed them to be introduced without much opposition. But when these were followed by appeals on account of *the injustice* or *iniquity of the sentence*, the nobles then began to be sensible, that if this innovation became general,

general, the shadow of power alone would remain in their hands, and all real authority and jurisdiction would centre in those courts which possessed the right of review. They instantly took the alarm, remonstrated against the encroachment, and contended boldly for their ancient privileges. But the monarchs in the different kingdoms of Europe pursued their plan with steadiness and prudence. Though forced to suspend their operations on some occasions, and seemingly to yield when any formidable confederacy of their vassals united against them, they resumed their measures as soon as they observed the nobles to be remiss or feeble, and pushed them with vigour. They appointed the royal courts, which originally were ambulatory, and irregular with respect to their times of meeting, to be held in a fixed place, and at stated seasons. They were solicitous to name judges of more distinguished abilities than such as presided in the courts of the barons. They added dignity to their character, and splendour to their assemblies. They laboured to render their forms regular, and their decrees consistent. Such judicatories became, of course, the objects of public confidence as well as veneration. The people, relinquishing the partial tribunals of their lords, were eager to bring every subject of contest under the more equal and discerning eye of those whom their sovereign had chosen to give judgment in his name. Thus Kings became once more the heads of the community, and the dispensers of justice

SECT. I.



**SECT. I.** justice to their subjects. The barons, in some kingdoms, ceased to exercise their right of jurisdiction, because it sunk into contempt; in others, it was circumscribed by such regulations as rendered it innocent, or it was entirely abolished by express statutes. Thus the administration of justice taking its rise from one source, and following one direction, held its course in every state with more uniformity, and with greater force [Z].

The regulations of the canon law promote a more perfect administration.

**VI.** THE forms and maxims of the canon law, which were become universally respectable from their authority in the spiritual courts, contributed not a little towards these improvements in jurisprudence which I have enumerated. If we consider the canon law politically, and view it either as a system framed on purpose to assist the clergy in usurping powers and jurisdiction no less repugnant to the nature of their function, than inconsistent with the order of government; or as the chief instrument in establishing the dominion of the Popes, which shook the throne, and endangered the liberties of every kingdom in Europe, we must pronounce it one of the most formidable engines ever formed against the happiness of civil society. But if we contemplate it merely as a code of laws respecting the rights and property of individuals, and attend only to the civil effects of its decisions concerning these, it will appear in a different, and a much more favourable light. In ages of

The progress of ecclesiastical usurpation.

[Z] NOTE XXIII.

ignorance



ignorance and credulity, the ministers of religion are the objects of superstitious veneration. When the barbarians who over-ran the Empire first embraced the Christian faith, they found the clergy in possession of considerable power; and they naturally transferred to those new guides the profound submission and reverence which they were accustomed to yield to the priests of that religion which they had forsaken. They deemed their persons to be as sacred as their function; and would have considered it as impious to subject them to the profane jurisdiction of the laity. The clergy were not blind to the advantages which the weakness of mankind afforded them. They established courts, in which every question relating to their own character, their function, or their property was tried. They pleaded, and obtained an almost total exemption from the authority of civil judges. Upon different pretexts, and by a multiplicity of artifices, they communicated this privilege to so many persons, and extended their jurisdiction to such a variety of cases, that the greater part of those affairs which gave rise to contest and litigation, was drawn under the cognizance of the spiritual courts.

BUT in order to dispose the laity to suffer these usurpations without murmuring or opposition, it was necessary to convince them, that the administration of justice would be rendered more perfect by the establishment of this new jurisdiction.

The plan of ecclesiastical jurisprudence more perfect than that in the civil courts.

This

**SECT. I.** This was not a difficult undertaking, at the period when ecclesiasticks carried on their encroachments with the greatest success. That scanty portion of science which served to guide men in the ages of darkness, was wholly engrossed by the clergy. They alone were accustomed to read, to enquire, and to reason. Whatever knowledge of ancient jurisprudence had been preserved, either by tradition, or in such books as had escaped the destructive rage of barbarians, was possessed only by them. Upon the maxims of that excellent system, they founded a code of laws consonant to the great principles of equity. Being directed by fixed and known rules, the forms of their courts were ascertained, and their decisions became uniform and consistent. Nor did they want authority sufficient to enforce their sentences. Excommunication and other ecclesiastical censures, were punishments more formidable than any that civil judges could inflict in support of their decrees.

The good effects of imitating and adopting it.

It is not surprising, then, that ecclesiastical jurisprudence should become such an object of admiration and respect; that exemption from civil jurisdiction was courted as a privilege, and conferred as a reward. It is not surprising, that even to rude people, the maxims of the canon law should appear more equal and just than that ill-digested jurisprudence which directed all proceedings in the civil courts. According to the latter, the differences between contending barons were terminated,

terminated, as in a state of nature, by the sword ; SECT. I.  
according to the former, every matter was sub-  
jected to the decision of laws. The one, by per-  
mitting judicial combats, left chance and force to  
be arbiters of right or wrong, of truth or false-  
hood ; the other, passed judgment with respect to  
these by the maxims of equity, and the testimony  
of witnesses. Any error or iniquity in a sentence  
pronounced by a baron to whom feudal jurisdiction  
belonged, was irremediable, because originally it  
was subject to the review of no superior tribunal ;  
the ecclesiastical law established a regular grada-  
tion of courts, through all which a cause might be  
carried by appeal, until it was determined by that  
authority which was held to be supreme in the  
church. Thus the genius and principles of the  
canon law prepared men for approving those three  
great alterations in the feudal jurisprudence which  
I have mentioned. But it was not with respect to  
these points alone that the canon law suggested  
improvements beneficial to society. Many of the  
regulations, now deemed the barriers of personal  
security, or the safeguards of private property,  
are contrary to the spirit, and repugnant to the  
maxims of the civil jurisprudence, known in Eu-  
rope during several centuries, and were borrowed  
from the rules and practice of the ecclesiastical  
courts. By observing the wisdom and equity of  
the decisions in these courts, men began to per-  
ceive the necessity either of deserting the martial  
tribunals

SECT. I. tribunals of the barons, or of attempting to reform them [AA].

The revival of the Roman law contributes more liberal ideas concerning justice and order.

The circumstances from which the Roman law fell into oblivion.

VII. THE revival of the knowledge and study of the Roman law co-operated with the causes which I have mentioned, in introducing more just and liberal ideas concerning the nature of government, and the administration of justice. Among the calamities which the devastations of the barbarians who broke in upon the Empire brought upon mankind, one of the greatest was their overturning the system of Roman jurisprudence, the noblest monument of the wisdom of that great people, formed to subdue and to govern the world. The laws and regulations of a civilized community, were altogether repugnant to the manners and ideas of these fierce invaders. They had respect to objects, of which a rude people had no conception; and were adapted to a state of society with which they were entirely unacquainted. For this reason, wherever they settled, the Roman jurisprudence soon sunk into oblivion, and lay buried for some centuries under the load of those institutions which the inhabitants of Europe dignified with the name of laws. But towards the middle of the twelfth century, a copy of Justinian's Pandects was accidentally discovered in Italy. By that time, the state of society was so far advanced, and the ideas of men so much en-

[AA] NOTE XXIV.

larged

larged and improved by the occurrences of several centuries, during which they had continued in political union, that they were struck with admiration of a system which their ancestors could not comprehend. Though they had not hitherto attained such a degree of refinement, as to catch from the ancients a relish for true philosophy, or speculative science; though they were still insensible to the beauty and elegance of classical composition; they were sufficiently qualified to judge with respect to the merit of their system of laws, in which all the points most interesting to mankind, and the chief objects of their attention in every age, were settled with discernment, precision and equity. All men of letters studied this new science with eagerness; and within a few years after the discovery of the Pandects, professors of civil law were appointed, who taught it publicly in most countries of Europe.

SECT. I.  
Circumstances which favoured the revival of it.

THE effects of having such a perfect model to study and to imitate were soon manifest. Men, as soon as they were acquainted with fixed and general laws, perceived the advantage of them, and became impatient to ascertain the principles and forms by which judges should regulate their decisions. Such was the ardour with which they carried on an undertaking of so great importance to society, that before the close of the twelfth century, the feudal law was reduced into a regular system; the code of canon law was enlarged and methodized;

The effects of this upon the ideas of men, and the dispensation of justice.

**SECT. I.** methodized; and the loose uncertain customs of different provinces or kingdoms were collected and arranged with an order and accuracy acquired from the knowledge of Roman jurisprudence. In some countries of Europe the Roman law was adopted as subsidiary to their own municipal law; and all cases to which the latter did not extend, were decided according to the principles of the former. In others, the maxims as well as forms of Roman jurisprudence mingled imperceptibly with the laws of the country, and had a powerful, though less sensible, influence, in improving and perfecting them: [BB].

From all these arose a distinction in professions.

THESE various improvements in the system of jurisprudence, and administration of justice, occasioned a change in manners, of great importance, and of extensive effect. They gave rise to a distinction of professions; they obliged men to cultivate different talents, and to aim at different accomplishments, in order to qualify themselves for the various departments and functions which became necessary in society. Among uncivilized nations, there is but one profession honourable, that of arms. All the ingenuity and vigour of the human mind are exerted in acquiring military skill, or address. The functions of peace are few and simple; and require no particular course of

[BB] NOTE XXV.

Dr. Ferguson's Essay on the History of Civil Society, part iv. sect. 1.

education

education or of study, as a preparation for discharging them. This was the state of Europe during several centuries. Every gentleman, born a soldier, scorned any other occupation; he was taught no science but that of war; even his exercises and pastimes were feats of martial prowess. Nor did the judicial character, which persons of noble birth were alone entitled to assume, demand any degree of knowledge beyond that which such untutored soldiers possessed. To recollect a few traditionary customs which time had confirmed, and rendered respectable; to mark out the lists of battle with due formality; to observe the issue of the combat; and to pronounce whether it had been conducted according to the laws of arms; included every thing that a baron, who acted as a judge, found it necessary to understand.

BUT when the forms of legal proceedings were fixed, when the rules of decision were committed to writing, and collected into a body, law became a science, the knowledge of which required a regular course of study, together with long attention to the practice of courts. Martial and illiterate nobles, had neither leisure nor inclination to undertake a task so laborious, as well as so foreign from all the occupations which they deemed entertaining, or suitable to their rank. They gradually relinquished their places in courts of justice, where their ignorance exposed them to contempt. They became weary of attending to the discussion

The effects  
of this on  
society.



SECT. I. of cases, which grew too intricate for them to comprehend. Not only the judicial determination of points which were the subject of controversy, but the conduct of all legal business and transactions was committed to persons trained by previous study and application to the knowledge of law. An order of men, to whom their fellow-citizens had daily recourse for advice, and to whom they looked up for decision in their most important concerns, naturally acquired consideration and influence in society. They were advanced to honours which had been considered as the peculiar rewards of military virtue. They were entrusted with offices of the highest dignity, and most extensive power. Thus, another profession than that of arms, came to be introduced among the laity, and was reputed honourable. The functions of civil life were attended to. The talents requisite for discharging them were cultivated. A new road was opened to wealth and eminence. The arts and virtues of peace were placed in their proper rank, and received their due recompence [CC].

The spirit  
of chivalry  
introduces  
more liberal  
sentiments,  
and more  
generous  
manners.

VIII. WHILE improvements so important with respect to the state of society and the administration of justice, gradually made progress in Europe, sentiments more liberal and generous had begun to animate the nobles. These were inspired by the spirit of Chivalry, which, though considered, commonly, as a wild institution, the effect of

[CC] NOTE XXVI.

caprice,

caprice, and the source of extravagance, arose SECT. I. naturally from the state of society at that period, and had a very serious influence in refining the manners of the European nations. The feudal state was a state of perpetual war, rapine, and anarchy; during which the weak and unarmed were exposed every moment to insults or injuries. The power of the sovereign was too limited to prevent these wrongs; and the administration of justice too feeble to redress them. There was scarcely any protection against violence and oppression, but what the valour and generosity of private persons afforded. The same spirit of enterprise which had prompted so many gentlemen to take arms in defence of the oppressed pilgrims in Palestine, incited others to declare themselves the patrons and avengers of injured innocence at home. When the final reduction of the Holy Land under the dominion of Infidels put an end to these foreign expeditions, the latter was the only employment left for the activity and courage of adventurers. To check the insolence of overgrown oppressors; to succour the distressed; to rescue the helpless from captivity; to protect, or to avenge women, orphans, and ecclesiastics, who could not bear arms in their own defence; to redress wrongs, and to remove grievances; were deemed acts of the highest prowess and merit. Valour, humanity, courtesy, justice, honour, were the characteristic qualities of chivalry. To these were added religion, which mingled itself with every passion and institution during the middle

Origin of  
Chivalry.

Secr. I ages, and by infusing a large proportion of enthusiastic zeal, gave them such force, as carried them to romantic excess. Men were trained to knighthood by a long previous discipline; they were admitted into the order by solemnities no less devout than pompous; every person of noble birth courted that honour; it was deemed a distinction superior to royalty; and monarchs were proud to receive it from the hands of private gentlemen.

Its beneficial eff. &c.

THIS singular institution, in which valour, gallantry, and religion, were so strangely blended, was wonderfully adapted to the taste and genius of martial nobles; and its effects were soon visible in their manners. War was carried on with less ferocity, when humanity came to be deemed the ornament of knighthood no less than courage. More gentle and polished manners were introduced, when courtesy was recommended as the most amiable of knightly virtues. Violence and oppression decreased, when it was reckoned meritorious to check and to punish them. A scrupulous adherence to truth, with the most religious attention to fulfil every engagement, became the distinguishing characteristic of a gentleman, because chivalry was regarded as the school of honour, and inculcated the most delicate sensibility with respect to that point. The admiration of these qualities, together with the high distinctions and prerogatives conferred on knighthood in every part of Europe, inspired persons of noble birth on some

some occasions with a species of military fanaticism, and led them to extravagant enterprises. But they imprinted deeply in their minds the principles of generosity and honour. These were strengthened by every thing that can affect the senses, or touch the heart. The wild exploits of those romantic knights who sallied forth in quest of adventures, are well known, and have been treated with proper ridicule. The political and permanent effects of the spirit of chivalry have been less observed. Perhaps, the humanity which accompanies all the operations of war, the refinements of gallantry, and the point of honour, the three chief circumstances which distinguish modern from ancient manners, may be ascribed in a great measure to this whimsical institution, seemingly of little benefit to mankind. The sentiments which chivalry inspired, had a wonderful influence on manners and conduct during the twelfth, thirteenth, fourteenth, and fifteenth centuries. They were so deeply rooted, that they continued to operate after the vigour and reputation of the institution itself began to decline. Some considerable transactions, recorded in the following history, resemble the adventurous exploits of chivalry, rather than the well regulated operations of sound policy. Some of the most eminent personages, whose characters will be delineated, were strongly tinged with this romantic spirit. Francis I. was ambitious to distinguish himself by all the qualities of an accomplished knight, and en-

SECT. I. deavoured to imitate the enterprising genius of chivalry in war, as well as its pomp and courtesy during peace. The fame which he acquired by these splendid actions, so far dazzled his more temperate rival, that he departed on some occasions from his usual prudence and moderation, and emulated Francis in deeds of prowess, or of gallantry [DD].

The progress of science has great influence on the manners and character of men.

Ignorance of the middle ages.

IX. THE progress of science, and the cultivation of literature, had considerable effect in changing the manners of the European nations, and introducing that civility and refinement by which they are now distinguished. At the time when their Empire was overturned, the Romans, though they had lost that correct taste which has rendered the productions of their ancestors the standards of excellence, and models for imitation to succeeding ages, still preserved their love of letters, and cultivated the arts with great ardour. But rude barbarians were so far from being struck with any admiration of these unknown accomplishments, that they despised them. They were not arrived at that state of society, when those faculties of the human mind, which have beauty and elegance for their objects, begin to unfold themselves. They were strangers to all those wants and desires which are the parents of ingenious invention; and as they did not comprehend either the merit or utility of the Roman arts, they destroyed the mo-

[DD] NOTE XXVII.

numents

numents of them, with industry not inferior to that SECT. I.  
 with which their posterity have since studied to  
 preserve, or to recover them. The convulsions  
 occasioned by their settlement in the Empire; the  
 frequent as well as violent revolutions in every  
 kingdom which they established; together with  
 the interior defects in the form of government  
 which they introduced, banished security and lei-  
 sure; prevented the growth of taste, or the culture  
 of science; and kept Europe, during several cen-  
 turies, in that state of ignorance which has been  
 already described. But the events and institutions  
 which I have enumerated, produced great altera-  
 tions in society. As soon as their operation, in re-  
 storing liberty and independence to one part of the  
 community, began to be felt; as soon as they be-  
 gan to communicate to all the members of society  
 some taste of the advantages arising from com-  
 merce, from public order, and from personal secu-  
 rity, the human mind became conscious of powers  
 which it did not formerly perceive, and fond of  
 occupations or pursuits of which it was formerly  
 incapable. Towards the beginning of the twelfth  
 century, we discern the first symptoms of its  
 awakening from that lethargy in which it had been  
 long sunk, and observe it turning with curiosity  
 and attention towards new objects.

THE first literary efforts, however, of the Euro-  
 pean nations in the middle ages, were extremely  
 ill-directed. Among nations, as well as individu-  
 als, the powers of imagination attain some degree

The first li-  
 terary efforts  
 ill-directed,  
 and the  
 causes of  
 this.

SECT. I. of vigour before the intellectual faculties are much exercised in speculative or abstract disquisition. Men are poets before they are philosophers. They feel with sensibility, and describe with force, when they have made but little progress in investigation or reasoning. The age of Homer and of Hesiod long preceded that of Thales, or of Socrates. But, unhappily for literature, our ancestors, deviating from this course which nature points out, plunged at once into the depths of abstruse and metaphysical inquiry. They had been converted to the Christian faith, soon after they settled in their new conquests. But they did not receive it pure. The presumption of men had added to the simple and instructive doctrines of Christianity, the theories of a vain philosophy, that attempted to penetrate into mysteries, and to decide questions which the limited faculties of the human mind are unable to comprehend, or to resolve. These over-curious speculations were incorporated with the system of religion, and came to be considered as the most essential part of it. As soon, then, as curiosity prompted men to inquire and to reason, these were the subjects which first presented themselves, and engaged their attention. The scholastic theology, with its infinite train of bold disquisitions, and subtle distinctions concerning points which are not the object of human reason, was the first production of the spirit of inquiry after it began to resume some degree of activity and vigour in Europe. It was not this circumstance alone that gave such



such a wrong turn to the minds of men, when they began again to exercise talents which they had so long neglected. Most of the persons who attempted to revive literature in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, had received instruction, or derived their principles of science from the Greeks in the eastern Empire, or from the Arabians in Spain and Africa. Both these people, acute and inquisitive to excess, corrupted those sciences which they cultivated. The former rendered theology a system of speculative refinement, or of endless controversy. The latter communicated to philosophy a spirit of metaphysical and frivolous subtlety. Misled by these guides, the persons who first applied to science were involved in a maze of intricate inquiries. Instead of allowing their fancy to take its natural range, and to produce such works of invention as might have improved their taste, and refined their sentiments; instead of cultivating those arts which embellish human life, and render it comfortable; they were fettered by authority, they were led astray by example, and wasted the whole force of their genius in speculations as unavailing as they were difficult.

BUT fruitless and ill directed as these speculations were, their novelty roused, and their boldness interested the human mind. The ardour with which men pursued those uninviting studies, was astonishing. Genuine philosophy was never cultivated, in any enlightened age, with more zeal. Schools, upon the model of those instituted by Charlemagne, were

They had, however, considerable effects.

SECT. I. were opened in every cathedral, and almost in every monastery of note. Colleges and universities were erected, and formed into communities or corporations, governed by their own laws, and invested with separate and extensive jurisdiction over their own members. A regular course of studies was planned. Privileges of great value were conferred on masters and scholars. Academical titles and honours of various kinds were invented, as a recompence for both. Nor was it in the schools alone that superiority in science led to reputation and authority; it became an object of respect in life, and advanced such as acquired it to a rank of no inconsiderable eminence. Allured by all these advantages, an incredible number of students resorted to those new seats of learning, and crowded with eagerness into that new path which was opened to fame and distinction.

A circumstance which prevented their being more extensive.

BUT how considerable soever these first efforts may appear, there was one circumstance which prevented the effects of them from being as extensive as they ought to have been. All the languages in Europe, during the period under review, were barbarous. They were destitute of elegance, of force, and even of perspicuity. No attempt had been hitherto made to improve or to polish them. The Latin tongue was consecrated by the church to religion. Custom, with authority scarcely less sacred, had appropriated it to literature. All the sciences cultivated in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, were taught in Latin. All books with respect

respect to them were written in that language. To SECT. I.  
 have treated of any important subject in a modern  
 language, would have been deemed a degradation  
 of it. This confined science within a very narrow  
 circle. The learned alone were admitted into the  
 temple of knowledge; the gate was shut against  
 all others, who were allowed to remain involved in  
 their former darkness and ignorance.

BUT though science was thus prevented, during  
 several ages, from diffusing itself through society,  
 and its influence much circumscribed; the pro-  
 gress which it made may be mentioned, neverthe-  
 less, among the great causes which contributed to  
 introduce a change of manners into Europe. The  
 ardent, though ill-judged spirit of inquiry which  
 I have described, occasioned a fermentation of mind  
 that put ingenuity and invention in motion, and  
 gave them vigour. It led men to a new employment  
 of their faculties, which they found to be agreeable  
 as well as interesting. It accustomed them to ex-  
 ercises and occupations which tended to soften  
 their manners, and to give them some relish for  
 the gentle virtues, peculiar to nations among  
 which science hath been cultivated with success  
 [EE].

X. THE progress of commerce had considerable  
 influence in polishing the manners of the European  
 nations, and in leading them to order, equal laws,

The pro-  
 gress of com-  
 merce had  
 great influ-  
 ence on  
 manners and  
 government,

[EE] NOTE XXVIII.

and

**SECT. I.** and humanity. The wants of men, in the original and most simple state of society, are so few, and their desires so limited, that they rest contented with the natural productions of their climate and soil, or with what they can add to these by their own rude industry. They have no superfluities to dispose of, and few necessities that demand a supply. Every little community subsisting on its own domestick stock, and satisfied with it, is either unacquainted with the states around it, or at variance with them. Society and manners must be considerably improved, and many provisions must be made for public order and personal security, before a liberal intercourse can take place between different nations. We find, accordingly, that the first effect of the settlement of the barbarians in the Empire, was to divide those nations which the Roman power had united. Europe was broken into many separate communities. The intercourse between these divided states, ceased almost totally during several centuries. Navigation was dangerous in seas infested by pirates; nor could strangers trust to a friendly reception in the ports of uncivilized nations. Even between distant parts of the same kingdom, the communication was rare and difficult. The lawless rapine of banditti, together with the avowed exactions of the nobles, scarcely less formidable and oppressive, rendered a journey of any length a perilous enterprise. Fixed to the spot in which they resided, the greater part of the inhabitants of Europe lost, in a great measure, the knowledge of remote regions, and were unacquainted

Low state of  
commerce  
in the mid-  
dle ages.

unacquainted with their names, their situations, SECT. I  
 their climates, and their commodities [FF].

VARIOUS causes, however, contributed to revive Cause of its revival.  
 the spirit of commerce, and to renew, in some degree, the intercourse between different nations. The Italians, by their connection with Constantinople and other cities of the Greek empire, had preserved in their own country some relish for the precious commodities and curious manufactures of the East. They communicated some knowledge of these to the countries contiguous to Italy. But this commerce was extremely limited, nor was the intercourse which it occasioned between different nations considerable. The Crusades, by leading multitudes from every corner of Europe into Asia, opened a more extensive communication between the East and West, which subsisted for two centuries; and though the object of these expeditions was conquest and not commerce; though the issue of them proved as unfortunate, as the motives for undertaking them were wild and enthusiastic, their commercial effects, as hath been shewn, were both beneficial and permanent. During the continuance of the Crusades, the great cities in Italy, and in other countries of Europe, acquired liberty, and together with it such privileges as rendered them respectable and independent communities. Thus, in every state there was formed a new order of citizens, to whom commerce presented itself as their proper object, and opened to

[FF] NOTE XXIX.

them

**SECT. I.** them a certain path to wealth and dignity. Soon after the close of the Holy War, the mariner's compass was invented, which, by rendering navigation more secure as well as more adventurous, facilitated the communication between remote nations, and brought them nearer to each other.

First among  
the Italians.

THE Italian States, during the same period, established a regular commerce with the East in the ports of Egypt, and drew from thence all the rich products of the Indies. They introduced into their own territories manufactures of various kinds, and carried them on with great ingenuity and vigour. They attempted new arts; and transplanted from warmer climates, to which they had been hitherto deemed peculiar, several natural productions which now furnish the materials of a lucrative and extended commerce. All these commodities, whether imported from Asia, or produced by their own skill, they disposed of to great advantage among the other people of Europe, who began to acquire some taste of elegance unknown to their ancestors, or despised by them. During the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, the commerce of Europe was almost entirely in the hands of the Italians, more commonly known in those ages by the name of Lombards. Companies or societies of Lombard merchants settled in every different kingdom. They were taken under the immediate protection of the several governments. They enjoyed extensive privileges and immunities. The operation of the ancient barbarous laws concerning  
strangers,

strangers, was suspended with respect to them. SECT. I.  
 They became the carriers, the manufacturers, and    
 the bankers of all Europe.

WHILE the Italians, in the south of Europe, Then by means of the Hanseatick.  
 cultivated trade with such industry and success, the commercial spirit awakened in the North towards the middle of the thirteenth century. As the nations around the Baltick were, at that time, extremely barbarous, and infested that sea with their piracies, the cities of Lubeck and Hamburgh, soon after they began to open some trade with these people, found it necessary to enter into a league of mutual defence. They derived such advantages from this union, that other towns acceded to their confederacy, and, in a short time, eighty of the most considerable cities scattered through those vast countries which stretch from the bottom of the Baltick to Cologne on the Rhine, joined in the famous Hanseatick league, which became so formidable, that its alliance was courted, and its enmity was dreaded by the greatest monarchs. The members of this powerful association formed the first systematick plan of commerce known in the middle ages, and conducted it by common laws enacted in their general assemblies. They supplied the rest of Europe with naval stores, and pitched on different towns, the most eminent of which was Bruges in Flanders, where they established staples in which their commerce was regularly carried on. Thither the Lombards brought the productions of India,



**SECT. I.** India, together with the manufactures of Italy, and exchanged them for the more bulky, but not less useful commodities of the North. The Hanseatick merchants disposed of the cargoes which they received from the Lombards, in the ports of the Baltick, or carried them up the great rivers into the interior parts of Germany.

Commerce  
makes pro-  
gress in the  
Nether-  
lands;

THIS regular intercourse opened between the nations in the North and South of Europe, made them sensible of their mutual wants, and created such new and vast demands for commodities of every kind, that it excited among the inhabitants of the Netherlands a more vigorous spirit in carrying on the two great manufactures of wool and flax, which seem to have been considerable in that country as far back as the age of Charlemagne. As Bruges became the center of communication between the Lombard and Hanseatick merchants, the Flemings traded with both in that city to such extent as well as advantage, as spread among them a general habit of industry, which long rendered Flanders and the adjacent provinces the most opulent, the most populous, and best cultivated countries in Europe.

and in  
England.

STRUCK with the flourishing state of these provinces, of which he discerned the true cause, Edward III. of England endeavoured to excite a spirit of industry among his own subjects, who, blind to the advantages of their situation, and ignorant  
of

of the source from which opulence was destined SECT. I. to flow into their country, were so little attentive to their commercial interests, as hardly to attempt those manufactures, the materials of which they furnished to foreigners. By alluring Flemish artisans to settle in his dominions, as well as by many wise laws for the encouragement and regulation of trade, Edward gave a beginning to the woollen manufactures of England, and first turned the active and enterprizing genius of his people towards those arts which have raised the English to the highest rank among commercial nations.

THIS increase of commerce, and of intercourse The beneficial effects of this. between nations, how inconsiderable soever it may appear in respect of their rapid and extensive progress during the last and present age, seems vast, when we compare it with the state of both in Europe previous to the twelfth century. It did not fail of producing great effects. Commerce tends to wear off those prejudices which maintain distinction and animosity between nations. It softens and polishes the manners of men. It unites them by one of the strongest of all ties, the desire of supplying their mutual wants. It disposes them to peace, by establishing in every state an order of citizens bound by their interest to be the guardians of publick tranquillity. As soon as the commercial spirit begins to acquire vigour, and to gain an ascendant in any society, we discover a new genius in its policy, its alliances, its wars, and its negotiations.

**SECT. I.** Conspicuous proofs of this occur in the history of the Italian States, of the Hanseatic league, and the cities of the Netherlands during the period under review. In proportion as commerce made its way into the different countries of Europe, they successively turned their attention to those objects, and adopted those manners, which occupy and distinguish polished nations [GG].

[GG] NOTE XXX.

A  
V I E W  
OF THE  
PROGRESS OF SOCIETY  
IN  
E U R O P E,  
FROM THE  
SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE,  
TO THE  
BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

SECTION II.

*View of the Progress of Society in Europe, with respect to the command of the national force requisite in foreign operations.*

**S**UCH are the events and institutions, which by their powerful operation contributed, gradually, to introduce more regular government and more polished manners into the various nations of Europe. When we survey the state of society, or the character of individuals, at the opening of the

SECT. II.  
State of society greatly improved at the beginning of the fifteenth century.

SECT. II. fifteenth century, and then turn back to view the condition of both at the time when the barbarous tribes which overturned the Roman power completed their settlement in their new conquests, the progress which mankind had made towards order and refinement will appear immense.

Still defective with respect to the command of the national force.

GOVERNMENT, however, was still far from having attained that state, in which extensive monarchies act with united vigour, or carry on great undertakings with perseverance and success. Small tribes or communities, even in their rudest state, may operate in concert, and exert their utmost force. They are excited to act not by the distant objects or the refined speculations, which interest or affect men in polished societies, but by their present feelings. The insults of an enemy kindle resentment; the success of a rival tribe awakens emulation: these passions communicate from breast to breast, and all the members of the community, with united ardour, rush into the field in order to gratify their revenge, or to acquire distinction. But in widely extended states, such as the great kingdoms of Europe at the beginning of the fifteenth century, where there is little intercourse between the distant members of the community, and where every great enterprize requires previous concert and long preparation, nothing can rouse and call forth their united strength, but the absolute command of a Despot, or the powerful influence of regular policy. Of the former the vast Empires

Empires in the East are an example; the irresistible mandate of the Sovereign reaches the most remote provinces of his dominions, and compels whatever number of his subjects he is pleased to summon, to follow his standard. The kingdoms of Europe, in the present age, are an instance of the latter; the Prince, by the less violent, but no less effectual operation of laws and a well regulated government, is enabled to avail himself of the whole force of his state, and to employ it in enterprizes which require strenuous and persevering efforts.

BUT, at the opening of the fifteenth century, the political constitution in all the kingdoms of Europe was very different from either of these states of government. The several monarchs, though they had somewhat enlarged the boundaries of prerogative by successful encroachments on the immunities and privileges of the nobility, were possessed of an authority extremely limited. The laws and interior police of kingdoms, though much improved by the various events and regulations which I have enumerated, were still feeble and imperfect. In every country, a numerous body of nobles, who continued to be formidable notwithstanding the various expedients employed to depress them, watched all the motions of their Sovereign with a jealous attention, which set bounds to his ambition, and either prevented his forming schemes of

The power  
of Monarchs  
very limited.

SECT. II, extensive enterprize, or thwarted the execution of them.

Their revenues small.

THE ordinary revenues of every Prince were so extremely small as to be inadequate to any great undertaking. He depended for extraordinary supplies on the good-will of his subjects, who granted them often with a reluctant, and always with a sparing hand.

Their armies unfit for conquest.

As the revenues of Princes were inconsiderable, the armies which they could bring into the field were unfit for long and effectual service. Instead of being able to employ troops trained to skill in arms, and to military subordination, by regular discipline, Monarchs were obliged to depend on such forces as their vassals conducted to their standard in consequence of their military tenures. These, as they were bound to remain under arms only for a short time, could not march far from their usual place of residence, and being more attached to the lord of whom they held, than to the Sovereign whom they served, were often as much disposed to counteract as to forward his schemes. Nor were they, even if they had been more subject to the command of the monarch, proper instruments to carry into execution any great and arduous enterprize. The strength of an army formed either for conquest or defence lies in infantry. To the stability and discipline of their legions, consisting chiefly of infantry, the

Romans



Romans during the times of the republick were SECT. II.  
indebted for all their victories; and when their  
descendants, forgetting the institutions which had  
led them to universal dominion, so far altered their  
military system as to place their principal confi-  
dence in a numerous cavalry, the undisciplined  
impetuosity of the barbarous nations who fought  
mostly on foot, was sufficient, as I have already  
observed, to overcome them. These nations, soon  
after they settled in their new conquests, unin-  
structed by the fatal error of the Romans, relin-  
quished the customs of their ancestors, and con-  
verted the chief force of their armies into cavalry.  
Among the Romans this change was occasioned  
by the effeminacy of their troops, who could not  
endure the fatigues of service, which their more  
virtuous and hardy ancestors sustained with ease.  
Among the people who established the new mo-  
narchies into which Europe was divided, this  
innovation in military discipline seems to have  
flowed from the pride of the nobles, who scorning  
to mingle with persons of inferior rank, aimed at  
being distinguished from them in the field as well  
as during peace. The institution of chivalry, and  
the frequency of tournaments, in which knights,  
in complete armour, entered the lists on horseback  
with extraordinary splendour, displaying amazing  
address, and force, and valour, brought cavalry  
into still greater esteem. The fondness for that  
service increased to such a degree, that, during  
the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, the armies

SECT. II. of Europe were composed almost entirely of cavalry. No gentleman would appear in the field but on horseback. To serve in any other manner he would have deemed derogatory to his rank. The cavalry, by way of distinction, was called *The battle*, and on it alone depended the fate of every action. The infantry, collected from the dregs and refuse of the people, ill armed and worse disciplined, was of no account.

They are incapable of forming any general or extensive plan of operation.


As these circumstances rendered the operations of particular kingdoms less considerable and less vigorous, so they long kept the Princes of Europe from giving such attention to the schemes and transactions of their neighbours, as led them to form any regular system of publick security. They prevented them from uniting in confederacy, or from acting with concert, in order to establish such a distribution and balance of power, as should hinder any state from rising to a superiority, which might endanger the general liberty and independence. During several centuries, the nations of Europe appear to have considered themselves as separate societies, scarcely connected together by any common interest, and little concerned in each other's affairs or operations. An extensive commerce did not afford them an opportunity of observing and penetrating into the schemes of every different state. They had not ambassadors residing constantly in every court to watch and give early intelligence of all its motions. The expectation  
of

of remote advantages, or the prospect of distant SECT. II. and contingent evils, were not sufficient to excite nations to take arms. They only, who were within the sphere of immediate danger, and unavoidably exposed to injury or insult, thought themselves interested in any contest, or bound to take precautions for their own safety.

WHOEVER records the transactions of any of the more considerable European states during the two last centuries, must write the history of Europe. Its various kingdoms, throughout that period, have been formed into one great system, so closely united, that each holding a determinate station, the operations of one are so felt by all, as to influence their counsels and regulate their measures. But previous to the fifteenth century, unless when vicinity of territory rendered the occasions of discord frequent and unavoidable, or when national emulation fomented or embittered the spirit of hostility, the affairs of different countries are seldom interwoven. In each kingdom of Europe great events and revolutions happened, which the other powers beheld with almost the same indifference as if they had been uninterested spectators, to whom the effect of these transactions could never extend.

DURING the violent struggles between France and England, and notwithstanding the alarming progress which was made towards rendering one

A confirmation of this from the affairs of France,

SECT. II. Prince the master of both these kingdoms, hardly  one measure which can be considered as the result of a sagacious and prudent policy, was formed in order to guard against an event so fatal to Europe. The Dukes of Burgundy and Bretagne, whom their situation would not permit to remain neutral, engaged, it is true, in the contest; but in taking their part, they seem rather to have followed the impulse of their passions, than to have been guided by any just discernment of the danger which threatened themselves and the tranquillity of Europe. The other Princes, seemingly unaffected by the alternate successes of the contending parties, left them to decide the quarrel, or interposed only by feeble and ineffectual negotiations.

From those  
of Spain.

NOTWITHSTANDING the perpetual hostilities in which the various kingdoms of Spain were engaged during several centuries, and the successive occurrences which visibly tended to unite that part of the continent into one great monarchy, the Princes of Europe scarcely took a single step, which discovers that they gave any attention to that important event. They permitted a power to arise imperceptibly, and to acquire strength there, which soon became formidable to all its neighbours,

From those  
of Germany.

AMIDST the violent convulsions with which the spirit of domination in the See of Rome, and the turbulent ambition of the German nobles, agitated the Empire, neither the authority of the Popes, seconded by all their artifices and intrigues, nor the

the solicitations of the Emperors, could induce SECT. II. any of the powerful monarchs in Europe to engage in their quarrel, or to avail themselves of many favourable opportunities of interposing with effect and advantage.

THIS amazing inactivity, during transactions so interesting, is not to be imputed to any incapacity of discerning their political consequences. The power of judging with sagacity, and of acting with vigour, is the portion of men in every age. The Monarchs who reigned in the different kingdoms of Europe during several centuries were not blind to their particular interest, negligent of the publick safety, or strangers to the method of securing both. If they did not adopt that salutary system, which teaches modern politicians to take the alarm at the prospect of distant dangers, which prompts them to check the first encroachments of any formidable power, and which renders each state the guardian, in some degree, of the rights and independence of all its neighbours, this was owing entirely to such imperfections and disorders in the civil government of each country, as made it impossible for sovereigns to act suitably to those ideas, which the posture of affairs, and their own observation, must have suggested.

BUT during the course of the fifteenth century, various events happened, which, by giving Princes more entire command of the force in their respective dominions, rendered their operations more vigorous

This inactivity occasioned entirely by the state of government.

Events happened during the 15th century which render the efforts of na-

## SECT. II.

tions more  
powerful  
and exten-  
sive.

vigorous and extensive. In consequence of this, the affairs of different kingdoms becoming more frequently as well as more intimately connected, they were gradually accustomed to act in concert and confederacy, and were insensibly prepared for forming a system of policy, in order to establish or to preserve such a balance of power as was most consistent with the general security. It was during the reign of Charles the Fifth, that the ideas, on which this system is founded, first came to be fully understood. It was then, that the maxims by which it has been uniformly maintained since that æra, were universally adopted. On this account, a view of the causes and events which contributed to establish a plan of policy more salutary and extensive than any that has taken place in the conduct of human affairs, is not only a necessary introduction to the following work, but is a capital object in the history of Europe.

The first of  
these was  
the depriv-  
ing the Eng-  
lish of their  
territories  
on the con-  
tinent.

THE first event, that occasioned any considerable alteration in the arrangement of affairs in Europe, was the annexation of the extensive territories, which England possessed on the continent, to the crown of France. While the English were masters of several of the most fertile and opulent provinces in France, and a great part of its most martial inhabitants was bound to follow their standard, an English monarch considered himself rather as the rival, than as the vassal of the sovereign of whom he held. The Kings of France, circumscribed

scribed and thwarted in their schemes and operations by an adversary no less jealous than formidable, durst not venture upon any enterprize of importance or of difficulty. The English were always at hand, ready to oppose them. They disputed even their right to their crown, and being able to penetrate, with ease, into the heart of the kingdom, could arm against them those very hands which ought to have been employed in their defence. Timid counsels and feeble efforts were natural to monarchs in such a situation. France, dismembered and overawed, could not attain its proper station in the system of Europe. But the death of Henry V. of England, happily for France, and not unfortunately for his own country, delivered the French from the calamity of having a foreign master seated on their throne. The weakness of a long minority, the dissensions in the English court, together with the unsteady and languid conduct which these occasioned, afforded the French a favourable opportunity of recovering the territories which they had lost. The native valour of the French nobility heightened to an enthusiastick confidence, by a supposed interposition of heaven in their behalf; conducted in the field by skilful leaders; and directed in the cabinet by a prudent monarch; was exerted with such vigour and success, during this favourable juncture, as not only wrested from the English their new conquests, but stript them of their ancient possessions in France, and reduced them within the



SECT. II. the narrow precincts of Calais, and its petty territory.

The effect  
of this on  
increasing  
the power of  
the French  
monarchy.

As soon as so many considerable provinces were re-united to their dominions, the Kings of France, conscious of this acquisition of strength, began to form bolder schemes of interior policy, as well as of foreign operations. They immediately became formidable to their neighbours, who began to fix their attention on their measures and motions, the importance of which they fully perceived. From this æra, France, possessed of the advantages which it derives from the situation and contiguity of its territories, as well as from the number and valour of its people, rose to new influence in Europe, and was the first power in a condition to give alarm to the jealousy or fears of the states around it.

On the state  
of the mili-  
tary force in  
the nation.

NOR was France indebted for this increase of importance merely to the re-union of the provinces which had been torn from it. A circumstance attended the recovery of these, which, though less considerable, and less observed, contributed not a little to give additional vigour and decision to all the efforts of that monarchy. During the obstinate struggles between France and England, all the defects of the military system under the feudal government were sensibly felt. A war of long continuance languished, when carried on by troops bound and accustomed to keep the field only for a few

a few weeks. Armies, composed chiefly of heavy-armed cavalry, were unfit either for the attack or the defence of the many towns and castles, which it became necessary to guard or to reduce. In order to obtain such permanent and effective force, as became requisite during these lengthened contests, the Kings of France took into their pay considerable bands of mercenary soldiers, levied sometimes among their own subjects, and sometimes in foreign countries. But as the feudal policy provided no sufficient fund for such extraordinary service, these adventurers were dismissed at the close of every campaign, or upon any prospect of accommodation; and having been little accustomed to the restraints of discipline, they frequently turned their arms against the country which they had been hired to defend, and desolated it with no less cruelty than its foreign enemies.

SECT. II.

A BODY of troops kept constantly on foot, and regularly trained to military subordination, would have supplied what was wanting in the feudal constitution, and have furnished Princes with the means of executing enterprizes, to which they were then unequal. Such an establishment, however, was so repugnant to the genius of feudal policy, and so incompatible with the privileges and pretensions of the nobility, that during several centuries no monarch was either so bold, or so powerful, as to venture on any step towards introducing it. At last, Charles VII. availing himself of the reputation which he had acquired by his successes

It occasions  
the intro-  
duction of  
standing  
armies.

against

SECT. II. against the English, and taking advantage of the impressions of terror which such a formidable enemy had left upon the minds of his subjects, executed that which his predecessors durst not attempt. Under pretence of keeping always on foot a force sufficient to defend the kingdom against any sudden invasion of the English, he, at the time when

A.D. 1445. he disbanded his other troops, retained under arms a body of nine thousand cavalry, and of sixteen thousand infantry. He appropriated funds for the regular payment of these; he stationed them in different places of the kingdom, according to his pleasure; and appointed the officers, who commanded and disciplined them. The prime nobility courted this service, in which they were taught to depend on their sovereign, to execute his orders, and to look up to him as the judge and rewarder of their merit. The feudal militia, composed of the vassals whom the nobles could call out to follow their standard, as it was in no degree comparable to a body of soldiers regularly trained to war, sunk gradually in reputation. The strength of armies came to be estimated only by the number of disciplined men which they contained. In less than a century, the nobles and their military tenants, though sometimes summoned to the field, according to ancient form, were considered as an incumbrance upon the troops with which they acted; and were viewed with contempt by soldiers accustomed to the vigorous and steady operations of regular service.

THUS

Thus the regulations of Charles the Seventh, by SECT. II.  
 establishing the first standing army known in Eu- The effects of this.  
 rope, occasioned an important revolution in its  
 affairs and policy. By depriving the nobles of that  
 direction of the national military force of the state,  
 which had raised them to such high authority and  
 importance, a deep wound was given to the feudal  
 aristocracy, in that part where its power seemed to  
 be most complete.

FRANCE, by forming this body of regular troops,  
 at a time when there was hardly a squadron or  
 company kept in constant pay in any other part of  
 Europe, acquired such advantages over its neigh-  
 bours, either in attack or defence, that self-pre-  
 servation made it necessary for them to imitate its  
 example. Mercenary troops were introduced into  
 all the considerable kingdoms on the continent.  
 They gradually became the only military force that  
 was employed or trusted. It has long been the  
 chief object of policy to increase and to support  
 them. It has long been the great aim of Princes  
 and ministers to discredit and to annihilate all other  
 means of national activity or defence.

As the Kings of France got the start of other The monarchs of France encouraged to extend their prerogative.  
 powers in establishing a military force in their do-  
 minions, which enabled them to carry on foreign  
 operations with more vigour, and to greater ex-  
 tent, so they were the first who effectually broke  
 the feudal aristocracy, and humbled the great vas-

## SECT. II.

fals of the crown, who by their exorbitant power had long circumscribed the royal prerogative within very narrow limits, and had rendered all the efforts of the monarchs of Europe inconsiderable. Many things concurred to undermine, gradually, the power of the feudal aristocracy in France. The wealth and property of the nobility were greatly impaired during the long wars which the kingdom was obliged to maintain with the English. The extraordinary zeal with which they exerted themselves in defence of their country against its ancient enemies, exhausted the fortunes of some great families. As almost every province in the kingdom was, in its turn, the seat of war, the lands of others were exposed to the depredations of the enemy, were ravaged by the mercenary troops which their sovereigns hired occasionally, but could not pay, or were desolated with rage still more destructive by the peasants, in their different insurrections. At the same time, the necessities of government having forced their Kings upon the desperate expedient of making great and sudden alterations in the current coin of the kingdom, the fines, quit-rents, and other payments fixed by ancient custom, sunk much in value, and the revenues of a fief were reduced far below the sum which it had once yielded. During their contests with the English, in which a generous nobility courted every station where danger appeared, or honour could be gained, many families of note became extinct, and their fiefs were reunited to the crown. Other fiefs, in a long course of years, fell to female heirs,


heirs, and were divided among them; were diminished by profuse donations to the church, or were broken and split by the succession of remote collateral heirs <sup>Sect. II.</sup>.

ENCOURAGED by these manifest symptoms of decline in that body which he wished to depress, Charles VII. during the first interval of peace with England, made several efforts towards establishing the regal prerogative on the ruins of the aristocracy. But his obligations to the nobles were so many, as well as recent, and their services in recovering the kingdom so splendid, as made it necessary for him to proceed with moderation and caution. Such, however, was the authority which the crown had acquired by the progress of its arms against the English, and so much was the power of the nobility diminished, that, without any opposition, he soon made innovations of great consequence in the constitution. He not only established that formidable body of regular troops, which has been mentioned, but he was the first monarch of France who, by his royal edict, without the concurrence of the States-general of the kingdom, levied an extraordinary subsidy on his people. He prevailed likewise with his subjects, to render several taxes perpetual, which had formerly been imposed occasionally, and exacted during a short time. By means of all these, he acquired such an increase of power, and extended

The progress  
of the royal  
power under  
Charles VII.

A. D. 1440.

<sup>1</sup> Bouhainvilliers Histoire de Gouvernement de France, Lettre xii.

SECT. II.  his prerogative so far beyond its ancient limits, that, from being the most dependent Prince who had ever sat upon the throne of France, he came to possess, during the latter years of his reign, a degree of authority which none of his predecessors had enjoyed for several ages<sup>†</sup>.

Under  
Louis XI.

THAT plan of humbling the nobility which Charles formed, his son Louis XI. carried on with a bolder spirit, and with greater success. Louis was formed by nature to be a tyrant; and at whatever period he had been called to ascend the throne, his reign must have abounded with schemes to oppress his people, and to render his own power absolute. Subtle, unfeeling, cruel; a stranger to every principle of integrity, and regardless of decency, he scorned all the restraints which a sense of honour, or the desire of fame, impose even upon ambitious men. Sagacious, at the same time, to discern his true interest, and influenced by that alone, he was capable of pursuing it with a persevering industry, and of adhering to it with a systematic spirit, from which no object could divert, and no danger could deter him.

His measures for humbling the nobility;

THE maxims of his administration were as profound as they were fatal to the privileges of the nobility. He filled all the departments of government with new men, and often with persons whom

<sup>†</sup> Histoire de France par Velly & Villaret, tom. xv. 331, &c. 389. tom. xvi. 324. Variations de la Monarchie Française, tom. iii. 162.



he called from the lowest as well as most despised functions in life, and raised at pleasure to stations of great power or trust. These were his only confidants, whom he consulted in forming his plans, and to whom he committed the execution of them: While the nobles, accustomed to be the companions, the favourites, and the ministers of their sovereigns, were treated with such studied and mortifying neglect, that if they would not submit to follow a court, in which they appeared without any shadow of their ancient power, they were obliged to retire to their castles, where they remained unemployed and forgotten. Not satisfied with having rendered the nobles of less consideration, by taking out of their hands the sole direction of affairs, Louis added insult to neglect; and by violating their most valuable privileges, endeavoured to degrade the order, and to reduce the members of it to the same level with other subjects. Persons of the highest rank among them, if so bold as to oppose his schemes, or so unfortunate as to awaken the jealousy of his capricious temper, were prosecuted with rigour, from which all who belonged to the order of nobility had hitherto been exempt; they were tried by judges who had no right to take cognizance of their actions; and were subjected to torture, or condemned to an infamous death, without regard to their birth or condition. The people, accustomed to see the blood of the most illustrious personages shed by the hands of the common executioner, to behold them shut up in dungeons, and carried

**SECT. II.** about in cages of iron, began to view the nobility with less reverence than formerly, and looked up with terror to the royal authority, which seemed to have humbled or annihilated every other power in the kingdom.

and of dividing them.

At the same time, Louis, being afraid that opposition might rouse the nobles, whom the rigour of his government had intimidated, or that self-preservation might at last teach them to unite, dexterously scattered among them the seeds of discord; and industriously fomented those ancient animosities between the great families, which the spirit of jealousy and emulation, natural to the feudal government, had originally kindled and still kept alive. To accomplish this, all the arts of intrigue, all the mysteries and refinements of his fraudulent policy were employed, and with such success, that at a juncture which required the most strenuous efforts, as well as the most perfect union, the nobles never acted, except during one short fally of resentment at the beginning of his reign, either with vigour or with concert.

He adds to the number of standing forces.

As he stripped the nobility of their privileges, he added to the power and prerogative of the crown. In order to have at command such a body of soldiers as might be sufficient to crush any force that his disaffected subjects could draw together, he not only kept on foot the regular troops which his father had raised, but took into his pay six thousand Swiss, at that time the best disciplined

and most formidable infantry in Europe". From SECT. II. the jealousy natural to tyrants, he confided in these foreign mercenaries, as the most devoted instruments of oppression, and the most faithful guardians of the power which he had acquired. That they might be ready to act on the shortest warning, he, during the latter years of his reign, kept a considerable body of them encamped in one place".

GREAT funds were requisite, not only to defray the expence of this additional establishment, but to supply the sums employed in the various enterprizes which the restless activity of his genius prompted him to undertake. But the prerogative that his father had assumed of levying taxes without the concurrence of the states-general, which he was careful not only to retain but to extend, enabled him to provide in some measure for the increasing charges of government. He augmented the revenues of the crown.

WHAT his prerogative, enlarged as it was, could not furnish, his address procured. He was the first monarch in Europe who discovered the method of managing those great assemblies, in which the feudal policy had vested the power of granting subsidies and of imposing taxes. He first taught other Princes the fatal art of beginning their attack on publick liberty, by corrupting the source from which it should flow. By exerting all His address in managing the assembly of states.

" Mem. de Comines, tom. i. 367. Dan. Hist. de la Milice Françoisse, tom. i. 182.

" Mem. de Com. tom. i. 381.

SECT. II. his power and address in influencing the election of representatives, by bribing or overawing the members, and by various changes which he artfully made in the form of their deliberations, Louis acquired such entire direction of these assemblies, that, from being the vigilant guardians of the privileges and property of the people, he rendered them tamely subservient, in promoting the most odious measures of his reign \*. As no power remained to set bounds to his exactions, he not only continued all the taxes imposed by his father, but made immense additions to them, which amounted to a sum that appeared astonishing to his contemporaries †.\*

He enlarges  
the bounds  
of the  
French mo-  
narchy.

NOR was it the power alone or wealth of the crown that Louis increased; he extended its territories by acquisitions of various kinds. He got possession of Roussillon by purchase; Provence was conveyed to him by the will of Charles de Anjou; and upon the death of Charles the Bold, he seized with a strong hand Burgundy and Artois, which had belonged to that Prince. Thus, during the course of a single reign, France was formed into one compact kingdom, and the steady unrelenting policy of Louis XI. not only subdued

\* Mem. de Comin. tom. i. 136. Chron. Scandal. ibid, tom. ii. p. 71.

† Mem. de Com. tom. i. 334.

\* Charles VII. levied taxes to the amount of 1,800,000 francs; Louis XI. raised 4,700,000. The former had in pay 9000 cavalry and 16,000 infantry. The latter augmented the cavalry to 15,000, and the infantry to 25,000. Mem. de Comines, i. 384.

the haughty spirit of the feudal nobles, but established a species of government, scarcely less absolute, or less terrible, than eastern despotism. SECT. II.

BUT fatal as his administration was to the liberties of his subjects, the authority which he acquired, the resources of which he became master, and his freedom from restraint in concerting his plans as well as in executing them, rendered his reign active and enterprising. Louis negotiated in all the courts of Europe; he observed the motions of all his neighbours; he engaged, either as principal, or as an auxiliary, in every great transaction; his resolutions were prompt; his operations vigorous; and upon every emergence he could call forth into action the whole force of his kingdom. From the æra of his reign, the Kings of France, no longer fettered and circumscribed at home by a jealous nobility, have exerted themselves more abroad, have formed more extensive schemes of foreign conquests, and have carried on war with a spirit and vigour long unknown in Europe.

By all these the French government rendered more active and enterprising.

THE example which Louis set was too inviting not to be imitated by other Princes. Henry VII. as soon as he was seated on the throne of England, formed the plan of enlarging his own prerogative, by breaking the power of the nobility. The circumstances under which he undertook to execute it, were less favourable than those which induced Charles VII. to make the same attempt; and the

Steps taken towards extending the power of the crown in England;

**SECT. II.** the spirit with which he conducted it, was very different from that of Louis XI. Charles, by the success of his arms against the English, by the merit of having expelled them out of so many provinces, had established himself so firmly in the confidence of his people, as encouraged him to make bold encroachments on the ancient constitution. The daring genius of Louis broke through every barrier, and endeavoured to overturn or to remove every obstacle that stood in his way. But Henry held the sceptre by a disputed title; a popular faction was ready every moment to take arms against him; and after long civil wars, during which the nobility had often displayed their power in creating and deposing Kings, he felt that the regal authority had been so much relaxed, and that he entered into possession of a prerogative so much abridged, as made it necessary to carry on his measures deliberately, and without any violent exertion. He endeavoured to undermine that formidable structure, which he durst not attack with open force. His schemes, though cautious and slow in their operation, were well concerted, and productive in the end of great effects. By his laws, permitting the barons to break the entails of their estates, and to expose them to sale; by his regulations to prevent the nobility from keeping in their service those numerous bands of retainers, which rendered them formidable, and turbulent; by encouraging population, agriculture, and commerce; by securing to his subjects, during a long reign, the enjoyment of the blessings which

which flow from the arts of peace; by accus-  
toming them to an administration of government,  
under which the laws were executed with stead-  
iness and vigour; he made imperceptibly such  
alterations in the English constitution, that he  
transmitted to his successor authority so extensive,  
as rendered him one of the most absolute Mo-  
narchs in Europe, and capable of the greatest and  
most vigorous efforts.

IN Spain, the union of all its crowns by the  
marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella; the glory that  
they acquired by the conquest of Granada, which  
brought the odious dominion of the Moors to a  
period; the command of the great armies which  
it had been necessary to keep long on foot, in  
order to accomplish this; the wisdom and stead-  
iness of their administration; and the address with  
which they availed themselves of every incident  
to humble the nobility, and to extend their own  
prerogative, conspired in raising these monarchs  
to such eminence and authority, as none of their  
predecessors had ever enjoyed. Though several  
causes, which shall be explained in another place,  
prevented their attaining the same extensive powers  
with the Kings of France and England, and pre-  
served the feudal constitution in Spain longer  
entire, their great abilities supplied the defects of  
their prerogative, and improved with such dex-  
terity all the advantages which they possessed, that  
Ferdinand carried on his foreign operations, which  
were

SECT. II.

and in  
Spain.



SECT. II. were very extensive, with extraordinary vigour and effect.

Events happened, which called the several monarchs to exert the new powers which they had acquired. **WHILE** these Princes were thus enlarging the boundaries of prerogative, and taking such steps towards rendering their kingdoms capable of acting with union and with force, events occurred, which called them forth to exert their new powers which they had acquired. These engaged them in such a series of enterprizes and negociations, that the affairs of all the considerable nations in Europe came to be insensibly interwoven with each other; and a great political system was gradually formed, which grew to be an object of universal attention.

The first of these events was the marriage of the heiress of the house of Burgundy. **THE** first event which merits notice, on account of its influence in producing this change in the state of Europe, was the marriage of the daughter of Charles the Bold, the sole heiress of the house of Burgundy. For some years before her father's death, she had been considered as the apparent successor to his territories, and Charles had made proposals of marrying her to several different Princes, with a view of alluring them, by that offer, to favour the schemes which his restless ambition was continually forming.

The importance of this to the state of Europe. **THIS** rendered the alliance with her an object of general attention; and all the advantages of acquiring possession of her territories, the most opulent at that time and best cultivated of any on this

this side of the Alps, were perfectly understood. SECT. II.  
 As soon, then, as the untimely death of Charles  
 opened the succession, the eyes of all the Princes  
 in Europe were turned towards Mary, and they  
 felt themselves deeply interested in the choice A. D. 1477.  
 January 5.  
 which she was about to make of the person, on  
 whom she would bestow that rich inheritance.

LOUIS XI. from whose kingdom several of the Views of  
 Louis XI.  
 with respect  
 to it.  
 provinces which she possessed had been dismem-  
 bered, and whose dominions stretched along the  
 frontier of her territories, had every inducement  
 to court her alliance. He had, likewise, a good  
 title to expect the favourable reception of any  
 reasonable proposition he should make, with respect  
 to the disposal of a Princess, who was the vassal  
 of his crown, and descended from the royal blood  
 of France. There were only two propositions,  
 however, which he could make with propriety.  
 The one was the marriage of the Dauphin, the  
 other that of the Count of Angouleme, a Prince  
 of the blood, with the heiress of Burgundy. By  
 the former, he would have annexed all her terri-  
 tories to his crown, and have rendered France at  
 once the most respectable monarchy in Europe.  
 But the great disparity of age between the two  
 parties, Mary being twenty, and the Dauphin  
 only eight years old; the avowed resolution of the  
 Flemings, not to chuse a master possessed of such  
 power as might enable him to form schemes dan-  
 gerous to their liberties; together with their dread  
 of falling under the odious and oppressive govern-  
 ment

SECT. II. ment of Louis, were obstacles in the way of executing this plan, which it was vain to think of surmounting. By the latter, the accomplishment of which might have been attained with ease, Mary having discovered some inclination to a match with the Count of Angouleme\*, Louis would have prevented the dominions of the house of Burgundy from being conveyed to a rival power, and in return for such a splendid establishment for the Count of Angouleme, he must have obtained, or would have extorted from him, concessions highly beneficial to the crown of France. But Louis had been accustomed so long to the intricacies of a crooked and insidious policy, that he could not be satisfied with what was obvious and simple; and was so fond of artifice and refinement, that he came to consider these as his ultimate object, not as the means only of conducting affairs. From this principle, no less than from his unwillingness to aggrandize any of his own subjects, or from his desire of oppressing the house of Burgundy, which he hated, he neglected the course which a Prince less able and artful would have taken, and followed one more suited to his own genius.

The singular course which he followed,

HE proposed to render himself, by force of arms, master of those provinces which Mary held of the crown of France, and even to push his conquests into her other territories, while he amused her with insisting continually on the impracticable match with the Dauphin. In prosecuting this

\* Mem. de Comines, i. 358.

plan, he displayed wonderful talents and industry, SECT. II.  
 and exhibited such scenes of treachery, falsehood  
 and cruelty, as are amazing even in the history  
 of Louis XI. Immediately upon the death of  
 Charles, he put his troops in motion, and ad-  
 vanced towards the Netherlands. He corrupted  
 the leading men in the provinces of Burgundy and  
 Artois, and seduced them to desert their sovereign.  
 He got admission into some of the frontier towns  
 by bribing the governors; the gates of others were  
 opened to him in consequence of his intrigues  
 with the inhabitants. He negotiated with Mary;  
 and, in order to render her odious to her subjects,  
 he betrayed to them her most important secrets.  
 He carried on a private correspondence with the  
 two ministers whom she chiefly trusted, and then  
 communicated the letters which he had received  
 from them to the States of Flanders, who, enraged  
 at their perfidy, brought them immediately to  
 trial, tortured them with extreme cruelty, and,  
 unmoved by the tears and entreaties of their sove-  
 reign, who knew and approved of all that the  
 ministers had done, they beheaded them in her  
 presence<sup>a</sup>.

WHILE Louis, by this conduct, unworthy of a  
 great monarch, was securing the possession of  
 Burgundy, Artois, and the towns on the Somme,  
 the States of Flanders carried on a negotiation  
 with the Emperor Frederick III. and concluded a  
 treaty of marriage between their sovereign and his

The effect  
 of this, the  
 marriage of  
 Maximilian  
 with the  
 heiress of  
 Burgundy.  
 A. D. 1477.

<sup>a</sup> Mem. de Conines, liv. v. ch. 15. p. 309, &c.

SECT. II. son Maximilian, Archduke of Austria. The illustrious birth of that Prince, as well as the high dignity of which he had the prospect, rendered the alliance honourable for Mary, while, from the distance of his hereditary territories, and the scantiness of his revenues, his power was so inconsiderable as did not excite the jealousy or fear of the Flemings.

The influence of that on the state of Europe.

THUS Louis, by the caprice of his temper, and the excess of his refinements, put the house of Austria in possession of this noble inheritance. By this acquisition, the foundation of the future grandeur of Charles V. was laid; and he became master of those territories, which enabled him to carry on his most formidable and decisive operations against France. Thus, too, the same monarch who first united the interior force of France, and established it on such a footing as to render it formidable to the rest of Europe, contributed, far contrary to his intention, to raise up a rival power, which, during two centuries, has thwarted the measures, opposed the arms, and checked the progress of his successors.

The next considerable event was the invasion of Italy by Charles VIII.

A. D. 1494.

THE next event of consequence in the fifteenth century, was the expedition of Charles VIII. into Italy. This occasioned revolutions no less memorable; produced alterations, which were more immediately perceived, both in the military and political system; roused the states of Europe to bolder efforts; and blended their affairs and interests

interests more closely together. The mild administration of Charles, a weak but generous Prince, <sup>SECT. II.</sup> seems to have revived the spirit and genius of <sup>The motives of this.</sup> the French nation, which the rigid despotism of Louis XI. his father had depressed, and almost extinguished. The ardour for military service, natural to the French nobility, returned, and their young monarch was impatient to distinguish his reign by some splendid enterprize. While he was uncertain towards what quarter he should turn his arms, the solicitations and intrigues of an Italian politician, no less infamous on account of his crimes, than eminent for his abilities, determined his choice. Ludovico Sforza, having formed the design of deposing his nephew the duke of Milan, and of placing himself on the ducal throne, was so much afraid of a combination of the Italian powers to thwart this measure, and to support the injured Prince, with whom most of them were connected by blood or alliance, that he saw the necessity of securing the aid of some able protector. The King of France was the person to whom he applied; and without disclosing to him his own intentions, he laboured to prevail with him to march into Italy, at the head of a powerful army, in order to seize the crown of Naples, to which he had pretensions as heir of the house of Anjou. The right to that kingdom, claimed by the Angevin family, had been conveyed to Louis XI. by Charles of Anjou, count of Maine and Provence. But that sagacious monarch, though he took immediate possession of those territories of

SECT. II. which Charles was really master, totally disregarded his ideal title to a kingdom, over which another Prince reigned in tranquillity; and uniformly declined involving himself in the labyrinth of Italian politicks. His son, more adventurous, or more inconsiderate, embarked eagerly in this enterprize; and contemning all the remonstrances of his most experienced counsellors, prepared to carry it on with the utmost vigour.

His resources for this enterprize.

THE power which Charles possessed was so great, that he reckoned himself equal to this arduous undertaking. His father had transmitted to him such an ample prerogative, as gave him the entire command of his kingdom. He himself had added considerably to the extent of his dominions, by his prudent marriage with the heiress of Bretagne, which rendered him master of that province, the last of the great fiefs that remained to be annexed to the crown. He soon assembled forces which he thought sufficient; and so impatient was he to enter on his career as a conqueror, that sacrificing what was real, for what was chimerical, he restored Roussillon to Ferdinand, and gave up part of his father's acquisitions in Artois to Maximilian, with a view of inducing these Princes not to molest France, while he was carrying on his operations in Italy.

His preparations for it,

BUT so different were the efforts of the States of Europe in the fifteenth century, from those which



which we shall behold in the course of this history, that the army, with which Charles undertook this great enterprize, did not exceed twenty thousand men. The train of artillery, however, the ammunition, and warlike stores of every kind provided for its use, were so considerable as to bear some resemblance to the immense apparatus of modern war<sup>b</sup>.

WHEN the French entered Italy, they met with nothing able to resist them. The Italian powers having remained, during a long period, undisturbed by the invasion of any foreign enemy, had formed a system with respect to their affairs, both in peace and war, peculiar to themselves. In order to adjust the interests, and balance the power of the different states into which Italy was divided, they were engaged in perpetual and endless negotiations with each other, which they conducted with all the subtlety of a refining and deceitful policy. Their contests in the field, when they had recourse to arms, were decided in mock battles, by innocent and bloodless victories. Upon the first appearance of the danger which now impended, they had recourse to the arts which they had studied, and employed their utmost skill in intrigue in order to avert it. But this proving ineffectual, their effeminate mercenaries, the only military force that remained in the country, being fit only for the parade of service, were terrified

<sup>b</sup> Mezeray Hist. tom. ii. 777.

{  
 SEC. II. at the aspect of real war, and shrunk at its approach. The impetuosity of the French valour appeared to them irresistible. Florence, Pisa, and Rome opened their gates as the French army advanced. The prospect of this dreadful invasion struck one King of Naples with such panic terror, that he died (if we may believe historians) of the fright. Another abdicated his throne from the same pusillanimous spirit. A third fled out of his dominions, as soon as the enemy appeared on the Neapolitan frontiers. Charles, after marching thither from the bottom of the Alps, with as much rapidity, and almost as little opposition, as if he had been on a progress through his own dominions, took quiet possession of the throne of Naples, and intimidated or gave law to every power in Italy.

Its effects,  
 particularly  
 in giving  
 rise to the  
 system con-  
 cerning a  
 balance of  
 power.

SUCH was the conclusion of this expedition, which must be considered as the first great exertion of those new powers which the Princes of Europe had acquired, and now began to exercise. Its effects were no less considerable than its success had been astonishing. The Italians, unable to resist the impression of the enemy which broke in upon them, permitted him to hold on his course undisturbed. They quickly perceived that no single power, which they could rouse to action, was an equal match for a monarch, who ruled over such extensive territories, and was at the head of such a martial people; but that a confederacy

deracy might accomplish what the separate members of it durst not attempt. To this expedient, the only one that remained to deliver or to preserve them from the yoke, they had recourse. While Charles inconsiderately wasted his time at Naples in festivals and triumphs on account of his past successes, or was fondly dreaming of future conquests in the East, to the empire of which he now aspired, they formed against him a powerful combination of almost all the Italian states, supported by the Emperor Maximilian, and Ferdinand King of Aragon. The union of so many powers, who suspended or forgot all their particular animosities, that they might act with concert against an enemy who had become formidable to them all, awakened Charles from his thoughtless security. He saw now no prospect of safety but in returning to France. An army of thirty thousand men, assembled by the allies, was ready to obstruct his march; and though the French, with a daring courage, which more than counterbalanced their inferiority in number, broke through that great body, and gained a victory, which opened to their monarch a safe passage into his own territories, he was stripped of all his conquests in Italy in as short a time as it had taken to acquire them; and the political system in that country resumed the same appearance as before his invasion.

THE sudden and decisive effect of this confederacy, seems to have instructed the Princes and

SECT. II. statesmen of Italy as much as the irruption of the French had disconcerted and alarmed them. They had extended, on this occasion, to the affairs of Europe, the maxims of that political science which had hitherto been applied only to regulate the operations of the petty states in their own country. They had discovered the method of preventing any monarch from rising to such a degree of power, as was inconsistent with the general liberty; and had manifested the importance of attending to that great secret in modern policy, the preservation of a proper distribution of power among all the members of the system into which the states of Europe are formed. During all the wars of which Italy from that time was the theatre, and amidst the hostile operations which the imprudence of Louis XII. and the ambition of Ferdinand of Aragon, carried on in that country, with little interruption, from the close of the fifteenth century to that period at which the subsequent history commences, the maintaining a proper balance of power between the contending parties, became the great object of attention to the statesmen of Italy. Nor was the idea confined to them. Self-preservation taught other powers to adopt it. It grew to be fashionable and universal. From this æra we can trace the progress of that intercourse between nations, which has linked the powers of Europe so closely together; and can discern the operations of that provident policy, which, during peace, guards against remote and contingent dangers; which

in

This becomes the great object of policy, first in Italy, and then in Europe.

in war hath prevented rapid and destructive conquests. SECT. II.

THIS was not the only effect of the operations which the great powers of Europe carried on in Italy. They contributed to render general such a change, as the French had begun to make in the state of their troops; and obliged all the Princes, who appeared on this new theatre of action, to establish the military force of their kingdoms on the same footing with that of France. When the feat of war came to be remote from the countries which maintained the contest, the service of the feudal vassals ceased to be of any use; and the necessity of employing troops regularly trained to arms, and kept in constant pay, came at once to be evident. When Charles marched into Italy, his cavalry was entirely composed of those companies of Gendarmes, embodied by Charles VII. and continued by Louis XI.; his infantry consisted partly of Swiss, hired of the Cantons, and partly of Gascons, armed and disciplined after the Swiss model. To these Louis XII. added a body of Germans, well known in the wars of Italy by the name of the Black Bands. But neither of these monarchs made any account of the feudal militia, or ever had recourse to that military force which they might have commanded, in virtue of the ancient institutions in their kingdom. Maximilian and Ferdinand, as soon as they began to act in Italy, employed the same instruments, and trusted the

The wars in Italy render standing armies general.

SECT. II. execution of their plans entirely to mercenary troops.

Teach the Europeans the superior importance of infantry in war.

THIS innovation in the military system was quickly followed by another, which the custom of employing Swiss in the Italian wars was the occasion of introducing. The arms and discipline of the Swiss were different from those of other European nations. During their long and violent struggles in defence of their liberties against the house of Austria, whose armies, like those of other considerable Princes, consisted chiefly of heavy-armed cavalry, the Swiss found that their poverty, and the small number of gentlemen residing in their country, at that time barren and ill cultivated, put it out of their power to bring into the field any body of horse capable of facing the enemy. Necessity compelled them to place all their confidence in infantry; and in order to render it capable of withstanding the shock of cavalry, they gave the soldiers breast-plates and helmets as defensive armour; together with long spears, halberts, and heavy swords, as weapons of offence. They formed them into large battalions, ranged in deep and close array, so that they could present on every side a formidable front to the enemy\*. The men at arms could make no impression on the solid strength of such a body. It repulsed the Austrians in all their attempts to conquer Switzerland. It broke the Burgundian Gendarmerie, which was scarcely inferior to that of France, either in number or re-

\* Machiavel's Art of War, b. ii. chap. ii. p. 451.

putation;

putation: And when first called to act in Italy, it SECT. II.  
 bore down by its irresistible force every enemy that  
 attempted to oppose it. These repeated proofs of  
 the decisive effect of infantry, exhibited on such  
 conspicuous occasions, restored that service to re-  
 putation, and gradually re-established the opinion,  
 which had been long exploded, of its superior im-  
 portance in the operations of war. But the glory  
 which the Swifs had acquired, having inspired them  
 with such high ideas of their own prowess and  
 consequence as frequently rendered them mutinous  
 and insolent, the Princes who employed them be-  
 came weary of depending on the caprice of foreign  
 mercenaries, and began to turn their attention to-  
 wards the improvement of their national infantry.

THE German powers having the command of National in-  
fantry esta-  
blished in  
Germany.  
 men, whom nature has endowed with that steady  
 courage and persevering strength which forms them  
 to be soldiers, soon modelled their troops in such  
 a manner, that they vied with the Swifs both in  
 discipline and valour.

THE French monarchs, though more slowly, and In France.  
 with greater difficulty, accustomed the impetuous  
 spirit of their people to subordination and disci-  
 pline: and were at such pains to render their na-  
 tional infantry respectable, that as early as the  
 reign of Louis XII. several gentlemen of high  
 rank had so far abandoned their ancient ideas, as  
 to condescend to enter into that service<sup>d</sup>.

<sup>d</sup> Brantome, tom. x. p. 18. Mem. de Fleuranges, 143.



## SECT. II.

In Spain.

THE Spaniards, whose situation made it difficult to employ any other than their national troops in the southern parts of Italy, which was the chief scene of their operations in that country, not only adopted the Swiss discipline, but improved upon it, by mingling a proper number of soldiers, armed with heavy muskets, in their battalions; and thus formed that famous body of infantry, which, during a century and a half, was the admiration and terror of all Europe. The Italian states gradually diminished the number of their cavalry, and, in imitation of their more powerful neighbours, brought the strength of their armies to consist in foot soldiers. From this period, the nations of Europe have carried on war with forces more adapted to every species of service, more capable of acting in every country, and better fitted both for making conquests, and for preserving them.

The Italian wars occasion an increase of the publick revenues in Europe.

As their efforts in Italy led the people of Europe to these improvements in the art of war, they gave them likewise the first idea of the expence which accompanies great and continued operations, and accustomed them to the burden of those impositions, which are necessary for supporting them. While the feudal policy subsisted in full vigour, while armies were composed of military vassals called forth to attack some neighbouring power, and to perform, in a short campaign, the services which they owed to their sovereign, the expence of war was extremely moderate. A small subsidy enabled a Prince to begin and to finish his greatest operations.

operations. But when Italy became the theatre on SECT. II.  
 which the powers of Europe contended for superiority, the preparations requisite for such a distant expedition, the pay of armies kept constantly on foot, their subsistence in a foreign country, the sieges to be undertaken, and the towns to be defended, swelled the charges of war immensely, and by creating demands unknown in less active times, multiplied taxes in every kingdom. The progress of ambition, however, was so rapid, and Princes extended their operations so fast, that it was impossible at first to establish funds proportional to the increase of expence which these occasioned. When Charles VIII. invaded Naples, the sums requisite for carrying on that enterprize so far exceeded those which France had been accustomed to contribute, that before he reached the frontiers of Italy, his treasury was exhausted, and the domestic resources, of which his extensive prerogative gave him the command, were at an end. As he durst not venture to lay any new imposition on his people, oppressed already with the weight of unusual burdens; the only expedient that remained was, to borrow of the Genoese as much money as might enable him to continue his march. But he could not obtain a sufficient sum, without consenting to pay annually the exorbitant interest of forty-two livres for every hundred that he received\*. We may observe the same disproportion between the efforts and revenues of other

\* Mem. de Comines, lib. vii. c. 5, p. 440.

SECT. II. Princes, his contemporaries. From this period, taxes went on increasing; and during the reign of Charles V. such sums were levied in every state, as would have appeared prodigious at the close of the fifteenth century, and gradually prepared the way for the more exorbitant exactions of modern times.

The league  
of Cambray  
another im-  
portant oc-  
currence.

THE last transaction, previous to the reign of Charles V. that merits attention on account of its influence upon the state of Europe, is the league of Cambray. To humble the republick of Venice, and to divide its territories, was the object of all the powers who united in this confederacy. The civil constitution of Venice, established on a firm basis, had suffered no considerable alteration for several centuries; during which, the senate conducted its affairs by maxims of policy no less prudent than vigorous, and adhered to these with an uniform consistent spirit, which gave that commonwealth great advantage over other states, whose views and measures changed as often as the form of their government, or the persons who administered it. By these unintermitted exertions of wisdom and valour, the Venetians enlarged the dominions of their commonwealth, until it became the most considerable power in Italy. While their extensive commerce, the useful and curious manufactures which they carried on, together with their monopoly of the precious commodities of the East, rendered Venice the most opulent state in Europe.

THEIR

THEIR power was the object of terror to their Italian neighbours. Their wealth was viewed with envy by the greatest monarchs, who could not vie with their private citizens in the magnificence of their buildings, in the richness of their dress and furniture, or in splendor and elegance of living<sup>f</sup>. Julius II. whose ambition was superior, and his abilities equal, to those of any Pontiff who ever sat on the Papal throne, formed the idea of this league against the Venetians, and endeavoured, by applying to these passions which I have mentioned, to persuade other Princes to join in it. By working upon the fears of the Italian powers, and upon the avarice of the monarchs beyond the Alps, he induced them, in concurrence with other causes, which it is not my province to explain, to form one of the most extensive confederacies against those haughty republicans, that Europe had ever beheld.

SECT. II.  
The motives of it.

THE Emperor, the King of France, the King of Aragon, the Pope, were principals in the league of Cambray, to which almost all the Princes of Italy acceded, the least considerable of them hoping for some share in the spoils of a state, which they already deemed to be devoted to destruction. The Venetians might have diverted this storm, or have broken its force; but with a presumptuous rashness, to which there is nothing similar in the course of their history, they waited its approach. The impetuous valour of the French, rendered

The rapid progress of the confederates.

<sup>f</sup> Heliani oratio apud Goldastum in polit. Imperial. p. 980.

**SECT. II.** ineffectual all their precautions for the safety of the republick; and the fatal battle of Ghiarradda entirely ruined the army, on which they relied for defence. Julius seized all the towns which they held in the ecclesiastical territories. Ferdinand re-annexed the towns of which they had got possession on the coast of Calabria, to his Neapolitan dominions. Maximilian, at the head of a powerful army, advanced towards Venice on the one side. The French pushed their conquests on the other. The Venetians, surrounded by so many enemies, and left without one ally, sunk from the height of presumption to the depths of despair; abandoned all their territories on the continent; and shut themselves up in their capital, as their last refuge, and the only place which they hoped to preserve.

Division  
arises among  
them.

THIS rapid success, however, proved fatal to the confederacy. The members of it, united while they were engaged in seizing their prey, began to feel their ancient jealousy and animosities revive, as soon as they had a prospect of dividing it. When the Venetians observed these symptoms of alienation and distrust, a ray of hope broke in upon them; the spirit natural to their councils returned; they resumed such wisdom and firmness, as made some atonement for their former imprudence and dejection; they recovered part of the territory which they had lost; they appeased the Pope and Ferdinand by well-timed concessions in their favour; and at length dissolved the confederacy, which

which had brought their commonwealth to the brink of ruin. SECT. II.

JULIUS, elated with beholding the effects of a league which he himself had planned, and imagining that nothing was too arduous for him to undertake, conceived the idea of expelling every foreign power out of Italy, and bent all the force of his mind towards executing a scheme so well suited to his vast and enterprizing genius. He directed his first attack against the French, who, on many accounts, were more odious to the Italians, than any of the foreigners who had acquired dominion in their country. By his activity and address, he prevailed on most of the powers, who had joined in the league of Cambray, to turn their arms against the King of France, their former ally; and engaged Henry VIII. who had lately ascended the throne of England, to favour their operations by invading France. Louis XII. resisted all the efforts of this formidable and unexpected confederacy, with undaunted fortitude. Hostilities were carried on, during several campaigns, in Italy, on the frontiers of Spain, and in Picardy, with alternate success. Exhausted, at length, by the variety as well as extent of his operations; unable to withstand a confederacy which brought against him superior force, conducted with wisdom, and acting with perseverance; Louis found it necessary to conclude separate treaties of peace with his

SECT. II. his enemies; and the war terminated with the loss of every thing which the French had acquired in Italy, except the castle of Milan, and a few inconsiderable towns in that dutchy.

By this the  
intercourse  
among the  
European  
nations in-  
creases.

THE various negociations carried on during this busy period, and the different combinations formed among powers hitherto little connected with each other, greatly increased that intercourse between the nations of Europe, which I have mentioned as one effect of the events in the fifteenth century. While the greatness of the objects at which they aimed, the distant expeditions which they undertook, as well as the length and obstinacy of the contests in which they engaged, obliged them to exert themselves with a vigour and perseverance unknown in the preceding ages.

They are  
prepared for  
the trans-  
actions of  
the sixteenth  
century.

THOSE active scenes which the following History will exhibit, as well as the variety and importance of those transactions which distinguish the period to which it extends, are not to be ascribed solely to the ambition, to the abilities, or to the rivalry of Charles V. and of Francis I. The kingdoms of Europe had arrived at such a degree of improvement in the internal administration of government, and Princes had acquired such command of the national force which was to be exerted in foreign wars, that they were in a condition to enlarge the sphere of their operations, and to increase



increase the vigour of their efforts. Their contests in Italy, which led them first to try the extent of the power that they had acquired, gave rise to so many opposite claims and pretensions, excited such a spirit of discord and rivalry between nations, and laid the foundation of so many quarrels, as could not fail of producing extraordinary convulsions in Europe. Accordingly the sixteenth century opened with the certain prospect of its abounding in great and interesting events.

STATE OF EUROPE.  
increase the vigor of their efforts. Their con-  
cessions, which led them first to try the extent  
of the matter had a mixed, but the to  
to many opposite claims and pretensions, existed  
such a spirit of discord and rivalry between us  
ment, and laid the foundation for many quarrels  
as could not fail of producing extraordinary con-  
canary opened with the certain prospect of its  
according in time and interesting events.

A  
V I E W  
OF THE  
PROGRESS OF SOCIETY  
IN  
E U R O P E,

FROM THE  
SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE,  
TO THE  
BEGINNING OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

SECTION III.

*View of the political Constitution of the principal  
States in Europe, at the Commencement of the  
sixteenth Century.*

SECT. III. **H**AVING thus enumerated the principal  
causes and events, the influence of which  
extended to all the states in Europe, and contri-  
buted either to improve their internal government  
and police, or to enlarge the sphere of their acti-  
vity, and to augment their national force; nothing  
remains, in order to prepare my readers for enter-  
ing

A consider-  
able variety  
in the con-  
stitution of  
the different  
nations of  
Europe.

ing with full information upon perusing the History of the reign of Charles V. but to give some view of the particular constitution and form of civil government, in each of the nations which acted any considerable part during that period. While the institutions and occurrences, which I have endeavoured to illustrate, formed the people of Europe to resemble each other, and conducted them from barbarism to refinement, in the same path, and with almost equal steps, there were other circumstances which occasioned a difference in their political establishments, and gave rise to those peculiar modes of government, which have produced such variety in the character and genius of nations.

It is no less necessary to become acquainted with the latter, than to have contemplated the former. The view which I have exhibited of the causes and events, whose influence was universal, will enable my readers to account for the surprising resemblance among the nations of Europe in their interior police, and foreign operations. But, without a distinct knowledge of the peculiar form and genius of their civil government, a great part of their transactions must appear altogether mysterious and inexplicable. The historians of particular States, as they seldom extended their views farther than to the amusement or instruction of their fellow-citizens, by whom they might presume that all domestic customs and institutions were perfectly understood, have often neglected to

Necessary to explain the state of each when Charles V. began his reign.

SECT. III. descend into such details with respect to these, as are sufficient to convey to foreigners full light and information concerning the occurrences which they relate. But a history, which comprehends the transactions of so many different countries, would be extremely imperfect, without a previous survey of their respective constitutions and political state. It is from his knowledge of these, that the reader must draw those principles, which will enable him to judge with discernment, and to decide with certainty concerning the conduct of nations.

A MINUTE detail, however, of the peculiar forms and regulations in every country, would lead to deductions of immeasurable length. To sketch out the great lines which distinguish and characterise each government, is all that the nature of my present work will admit of, and all that is necessary to illustrate the events which it records.

The state  
of Italy.

AT the opening of the sixteenth century, the political face of Italy was extremely different from that of any other part of Europe. Instead of those extensive monarchies, which occupied the rest of the continent, that delightful country was parcelled out among many small states, each of which possessed sovereign and independent jurisdiction. The only monarchy in Italy was that of Naples. The dominion of the Popes was of a peculiar species, to which there is nothing similar either in ancient or modern times. In Venice and  
Florence,

Florence, a republican form of government was established. Milan was subject to sovereigns, who had assumed no higher title than that of Dukes.

SECT. III.

THE Pope was the first of these powers in dignity, and not the least considerable by the extent of his territories. In the primitive church, the jurisdiction of bishops was equal and co-ordinate. They derived, perhaps, some degree of consideration from the dignity of the See in which they presided. They possessed, however, no real authority or pre-eminence, but what they acquired by superior abilities, or superior sanctity. As Rome had so long been the seat of empire, and capital of the world, its bishops were on that account entitled to respect; they received it; but during several ages they claimed and received nothing more. From these humble beginnings, they advanced with such an adventurous and well-directed ambition, that they established a spiritual dominion over the minds and sentiments of men, to which all Europe submitted with implicit obedience. Their claim of universal jurisdiction, as heads of the church, and their pretensions to infallibility in their decisions, as successors of St. Peter, are as chimerical, as they are repugnant to the genius of the Christian religion. But on these foundations, the superstition and credulity of mankind enabled them to erect an amazing superstructure. In all ecclesiastical controversies, their decisions were received as the infallible oracles of truth. Nor was the plenitude of their power confined

The Papal dignity the highest in Europe.

Origin and progress of the Papal power.

**SECT. III.** fined to these alone; they dethroned monarchs; disposed of crowns; absolved subjects from the obedience due to their sovereigns; and laid kingdoms under interdicts. There was not a state in Europe which had not been disquieted by their ambition. There was not a throne which they had not shaken; nor a Prince, who did not tremble at their power.

The territories of the Popes inadequate to support their spiritual jurisdiction.

NOTHING was wanting to render this Empire absolute, and to establish it on the ruins of all civil authority, but that the Popes should have possessed such a degree of temporal power, as was sufficient to second and enforce their spiritual decrees. Happily for mankind, while their spiritual jurisdiction was most extensive, and at its greatest height, their temporal property was extremely limited. They were powerful Pontiffs, formidable at a distance; but they were petty Princes, without any considerable domestick force. They had early endeavoured, indeed, to acquire territory by arts, similar to those which they had employed in extending their jurisdiction. Under pretence of a donation from Constantine, and of another from Charlemagne or his father Pepin, they attempted to take possession of some towns adjacent to Rome. But these donations were fictitious, and availed them little. The benefactions, for which they were indebted to the credulity of the Norman adventurers, who conquered Naples, and to the superstition of the countess Matilda, were

were real, and added ample domains to the Holy See. SECT. III.

BUT the power of the Popes did not increase in proportion to the extent of territory which they had acquired. In the dominions annexed to the Holy See, as well as in those subject to other Princes in Italy, the sovereign of a state was far from having the command of the force which it contained. During the turbulence and confusion of the middle ages, the powerful nobility or leaders of popular factions in Italy, had seized the government of different towns; and after strengthening their fortifications, and taking a body of mercenaries into pay, they aspired at independence. The territory which the church had gained, was filled with petty tyrants of this kind, who left the Pope hardly the shadow of dominion.

Their authority in their own territories extremely limited.

As these usurpations almost annihilated the Papal power in the greater part of the towns subject to the church, the Roman barons frequently disputed the authority of the Popes, even in Rome itself. In the twelfth century, an opinion began to be propagated, "That as the function of ecclesiasticks was purely spiritual, they ought to possess no property, and to claim no temporal jurisdiction; but, according to the laudable example of their predecessors in the primitive church, should subsist wholly upon their tithes, or upon the voluntary oblations of the people<sup>a</sup>." This doctrine being

It was circumscribed by the ambition of the Roman barons,

<sup>a</sup> Otto Frisingensis de Gestis Frider. Imp. lib. ii. cap. 10.



SECT. III. addressed to men, who had beheld the scandalous manner in which the avarice and ambition of the clergy had prompted them to contend for wealth, and to exercise power, they listened to it with fond attention. The Roman Barons, who had felt most sensibly the rigour of ecclesiastical oppression, adopted these sentiments with such ardour, that they set themselves instantly to shake off the yoke.

A. D. 1143. They endeavoured to restore some image of their ancient liberty, by reviving the institution of the Roman senate, in which they vested supreme authority; committing the executive power sometimes to one chief senator, sometimes to two, and sometimes to a magistrate dignified with the name of *The Patrician*. The Popes exerted themselves with vigour, in order to check this fatal encroachment on their jurisdiction. One of them, finding all his endeavours ineffectual, was so much mortified, that extreme grief cut short his days. Another, having ventured to attack the senators at the head of some armed men, was mortally wounded in the fray<sup>b</sup>. During a considerable period, the power of the Popes, before which the greatest monarchs in Europe trembled, was circumscribed within such narrow limits in their own capital, that they durst hardly exert any act of authority without the permission and concurrence of the senate.

<sup>b</sup> Otto Frising. Chron. lib. vii. cap. 27. 31. Id. de Gest. Frid. lib. i. c. 27. Muratori Annali d'Italia, vol. ix. 398. 404.

ENCROACHMENTS were made upon the Papal authority, not only by the usurpations of the Roman nobility, but by the mutinous spirit of the people. During seventy years of the fourteenth century, the Popes fixed their residence in Avignon. The inhabitants of Rome, accustomed to consider themselves as the descendants of the people who had conquered the world, and had given laws to it, were too high-spirited to submit with patience to the delegated authority of those persons, to whom the Popes committed the government of the city. On many occasions, they opposed the execution of the Papal mandates, and on the slightest appearance of innovation or oppression, they were ready to take arms in defence of their own immunities. Towards the middle of the fourteenth century, being instigated by Nicolas Rienzo, a man of low birth and a seditious spirit, but of popular eloquence, and an enterprising ambition, they drove all the nobility out of the city, established a democratical form of government, elected Rienzo Tribune of the people, and invested him with extensive authority. But though the frantick proceedings of the Tribune soon overturned this new system; though the government of Rome was reinstated in its ancient form; yet every fresh attack contributed to weaken the Papal jurisdiction: and the turbulence of the people concurred with the spirit of independence among the nobility, to circumscribe it within very narrow

SECT. III.  
and by the  
turbulence  
of the Ro-  
man people,  
from A. D.  
1308, to  
A. D. 1377.

SECT. III. narrow bounds<sup>c</sup>. Gregory VII. and other domineering pontiffs, accomplished those great things which rendered them so formidable to the Emperors with whom they contended, not by the force of their arms, or by the extent of their power, but by the dread of their spiritual censures, and by the effect of their intrigues, which excited rivals, and called forth enemies against every Prince, whom they wished to depress or to destroy.

Alexander VI. and Julius II. render the Popes considerable Princes.

MANY attempts were made by the Popes, not only to humble those usurpers, who lorded it over the cities in the ecclesiastical state, but to break the turbulent spirit of the Roman people. These were long unsuccessful. At last Alexander VI. with a policy no less artful than flagitious, subdued and extirpated most of the great Roman barons, and rendered the Popes masters of their own dominions. The enterprising ambition of Julius II. added conquests of no inconsiderable value to the patrimony of St. Peter. Thus the Popes, by degrees, became powerful temporal Princes. Their territories, in the age of Charles V. were of greater extent than at present; their country seems to have been better cultivated, and more populous; and as they drew large contributions from every part of Europe, their revenues

<sup>c</sup> Histoire Florentine de Giov. Villani, lib. xii. c. 89. 104. ap. Murat. Script. Rerum Ital. vol. xiii. Vita de Cola di Rienzo, ap. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. iii. p. 399, &c. Hist. de Nic. Rienzy, par M. de Boispreaux, p. 91, &c.

far exceeded those of the neighbouring powers, and rendered them capable of more sudden and vigorous efforts. SECT. III.

THE genius of the papal government, however, was better adapted to the exercise of spiritual dominion, than of temporal power. With respect to the former, all its maxims were steady and invariable. Every new Pontiff adopted the plan of his predecessor. By education and habit, Ecclesiastics were so formed, that the character of the individual was sunk in that of the profession; and the passions of the man were sacrificed to the interest and honour of the order. The hands which held the reins of administration might change; but the spirit which conducted them was always the same. While the measures of other governments fluctuated, and the objects at which they aimed varied, the church kept one end in view; and to this unrelaxing constancy of pursuit, it was indebted for its success in the boldest attempts ever made by human ambition.

Defects in  
the nature  
of ecclesi-  
astical do-  
minion.

BUT in their civil administration, the Popes followed no such uniform or consistent plan. There, as in other governments, the character, the passions, and the interests of the person who had the supreme direction of affairs, occasioned a variation both in objects and measures. As few Prelates reached the summit of ecclesiastical dignity, until they were far advanced in life, a change of masters

was

SECT. III. was more frequent in the Papal dominions than in other states, and the political system was, of course, less stable and permanent. Every Pope was eager to make the most of the short period, during which he had the prospect of enjoying power, in order to aggrandize his own family, and to attain his private ends; and it was often the first business of his successor to undo all that he had done, and to overturn what he had established.

As Ecclesiasticks were trained to pacifick arts, and early initiated in the mysteries of that policy, by which the court of Rome extended or supported its spiritual dominion, the Popes were apt to conduct their temporal affairs with the same spirit; and in all their measures were more ready to employ the refinements of intrigue, than the force of arms. It was in the Papal court that address and subtlety in negociation first became a science; and during the sixteenth century, Rome was considered as the school in which it might be best acquired.

As the decorum of their ecclesiastical character prevented the Popes from placing themselves at the head of their armies, or taking the command, in person, of the military force in their dominions, they were afraid to arm their subjects; and in all their operations, whether offensive or defensive, they trusted entirely to mercenary troops.

As their power and dominions could not descend SECT. III.  
 to their posterity, the Popes were less solicitous  
 than other Princes to form or to encourage schemes  
 of publick utility and improvement. Their tenure  
 was only for a short life; present advantage was  
 what they chiefly studied; to squeeze and to amass,  
 not to meliorate, was their object. They erected,  
 perhaps, some work of ostentation, to remain as a  
 monument of their Pontificate; they found it ne-  
 cessary, at some times, to establish useful institu-  
 tions, in order to sooth and silence the turbulent  
 populace of Rome; but plans of general benefit  
 to their subjects, and framed with a view to futurity,  
 were rarely objects of attention in the Papal policy.  
 The patrimony of St. Peter was worse governed  
 than any part of Europe; and though a generous  
 Pontiff might suspend for a little, or counteract  
 the effects of those vices which are peculiar to the  
 administration of ecclesiasticks; the disease not  
 only remained incurable, but has gone on increas-  
 ing from age to age; and the decline of the state  
 has kept pace with its progress.

ONE circumstance, farther, concerning the Papal  
 government, is so singular, as to merit attention.  
 As the spiritual supremacy and temporal power  
 were united in one person, and uniformly aided each  
 other in their operations, they became so blended  
 together, that it was difficult to separate them,  
 even in imagination. The potentates, who found  
 it necessary to oppose the measures which the  
 Popes

The Popes  
 derive some  
 advantages  
 from the  
 union of  
 their spiri-  
 tual and  
 temporal  
 authority.

SECT. III. Popes pursued as temporal Princes, could not divest themselves of the reverence which they imagined to be due to them as heads of the church, and vicars of Jesus Christ. It was with reluctance that they could be brought to a rupture with them; they were averse to push their operations against them to extremity; they listened eagerly to the first overtures of accommodation, and were willing to procure it almost upon any terms. Their consciousness of this encouraged the enterprizing Pontiffs, who filled the Papal throne about the beginning of the sixteenth century, to engage in schemes seemingly the most extravagant. They trusted, that if their temporal power was not sufficient to carry them through with success, the respect paid to their spiritual dignity would enable them to extricate themselves with facility and with honour<sup>d</sup>.

But

<sup>d</sup> The manner in which Louis XII. of France undertook and carried on war against Julius II. remarkably illustrates this observation. Louis solemnly consulted the clergy of France, whether it was lawful to take arms against a Pope, who had wantonly kindled war in Europe, and whom neither the faith of treaties, nor gratitude for favours received, nor the decorum of his character, could restrain from the most violent actions, to which the lust of power prompts ambitious Princes. Though his clergy authorised the war, yet Anne of Bretagne, his Queen, entertained scruples with regard to the lawfulness of it. The King himself, from some superstition of the same kind, carried it on faintly; and, upon every fresh advantage, renewed his propositions of peace. Mezeray, *Hist. de France*, fol. edit. 1685. tom. i. 852. I shall produce another proof of this reverence for the Papal character, still more striking. Guicciardini, the most sagacious, perhaps, of all modern historians, and the



But when Popes came to take part more frequently SECT. III.  
 in the contests among Princes, and to engage as  
 principals or auxiliaries in every war kindled in  
 Europe, this veneration for their sacred character  
 began to abate; and striking instances will occur  
 in the following history of its being almost totally  
 extinct.

OF all the Italian powers, the republick of  
 Venice, next to the Pope, was most connected  
 with the rest of Europe. The rise of that com-  
 monwealth, during the inroads of the Huns in the  
 fifth century; the singular situation of its capital  
 in the small isles of the Adriatick gulf; and the  
 more singular form of its civil constitution, are ge-  
 nerally known. If we view the Venetian govern-  
 ment as calculated for the order of nobles alone, its  
 institutions may be pronounced excellent; the deli-  
 berative, legislative, and executive powers, are so  
 admirably distributed and adjusted, that it must be  
 regarded as a perfect model of political wisdom.  
 But if we consider it as formed for a numerous body  
 of people subject to its jurisdiction, it will appear  
 a rigid and partial aristocracy, which lodges all  
 power in the hands of a few members of the com-  
 munity, while it degrades and oppresses the rest.

Constitution  
 of the re-  
 publick of  
 Venice,  
 with its rise  
 and progress.

the boldest in painting the vices and ambition of the Popes,  
 represents the death of Migliau, a Spanish officer, who was  
 killed during the siege of Naples, as a punishment inflicted on  
 him by Heaven, on account of his having opposed the setting  
 of Clement VII. at liberty. Guic. Historia d'Italia, Genev.  
 1645, vol. ii. lib. 18. p. 467.

## SECT. III.

Defects in  
its govern-  
ment, par-  
ticularly  
with respect  
to its mili-  
tary opera-  
tions.

THE spirit of government, in a commonwealth of this species, was, of course, timid and jealous. The Venetian nobles distrusted their own subjects, and were afraid of allowing them the use of arms. They encouraged among them the arts of industry and commerce; they employed them in manufactures and in navigation; but never admitted them into the troops which the state kept in its pay. The military force of the republick consisted entirely of foreign mercenaries. The command of these was never trusted to noble Venetians, lest they should acquire such influence over the army, as might endanger the publick liberty; or become accustomed to the exercise of such power, as would make them unwilling to return to the condition of private citizens. A soldier of fortune was placed at the head of the armies of the commonwealth; and to obtain that honour, was the great object of the Italian *Condottieri*, or leaders of bands, who, in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, made a trade of war, and raised and hired out soldiers to different states. But the same suspicious policy, which induced them to employ these adventurers, prevented their placing entire confidence in them. Two noblemen, appointed by the senate, accompanied their army when it took the field, with the appellation of *Proveditori*, and, like the field-deputies of the Dutch republick in latter times, observed all the motions of the general, and checked and controuled him in all his operations.

A COMMONWEALTH, with such civil and military institutions, was not formed to make conquests. SECT. III.  
 While its subjects were disarmed, and its nobles excluded from military command, it carried on its warlike enterprizes with great disadvantage. This ought to have taught the Venetians to make self-preservation, and the enjoyment of domestic security, the objects of their policy. But republicks are apt to be seduced by the spirit of ambition, as well as Princes. When the Venetians so far forgot the interior defects in their government, as to aim at extensive conquests, the fatal blow, which they received in the war excited by the league of Cambray, convinced them of the imprudence and danger of making violent efforts, in opposition to the genius and tendency of their constitution.

It is not, however, by its military, but by its naval and commercial power, that the importance of the Venetian commonwealth must be estimated. Excellence  
of its naval  
institutions.  
 In the latter, the real force and nerves of the state consisted. The jealousy of government did not extend to this department. Nothing was apprehended from this quarter, that could prove formidable to liberty. The senate encouraged the nobles to trade, and to serve on board the fleet. They became merchants and admirals. They increased the wealth of their country by their industry. They added to its dominions, by the valour with which they conducted its naval armaments.

## SECT. III.

The extent  
of its com-  
merce,

THE Venetian commerce was an inexhaustible source of opulence. All the nations in Europe depended upon them, not only for the commodities of the East, but for various manufactures fabricated by them alone, or finished with a dexterity and elegance unknown in other countries. From this extensive commerce, the state derived such immense supplies as concealed these vices in its constitution which I have mentioned; and enabled it to keep on foot such armies, as were not only an over-match for the force which any of its neighbours could bring into the field, but were sufficient to contend, for some time, with the powerful monarchs beyond the Alps. During its struggles with the Princes united against it by the league of Cambray, the republic levied sums which, even in the present age, would be deemed considerable; and while the King of France paid the exorbitant interest which I have mentioned for the money advanced to him, and the Emperor eager to borrow, but destitute of credit, was known by the name of *Maximilian the Money-less*, the Venetians raised whatever sums they pleased, at the moderate premium of five in the hundred<sup>e</sup>.

The constitution of  
Florence.

THE constitution of Florence was perfectly the reverse of the Venetian. It partook as much of the democratical turbulence and licentiousness, as

<sup>e</sup> Hist. de la ligue faite à Cambray par M. l'Abbè du Boe, lib. v. Sandi Storia Civil Veneziana, lib. viii, c. 16. p. 891, &c.

the other of aristocratical rigour. Florence, how-  
ever, was a commercial, not a military democracy.

SECT. III.

The nature of its institutions was favourable to commerce, and the genius of the people was turned towards it. The vast wealth which the family of Medici had acquired by trade; together with the magnificence, the generosity, and the virtue of the first Cosmo, gave him such an ascendant over the affections as well as the councils of his countrymen, that though the forms of popular government were preserved, though the various departments of administration were filled by magistrates distinguished by the ancient names, and elected in the usual manner, he was in reality the head of the commonwealth, and in the station of a private citizen he possessed supreme authority. Cosmo transmitted a considerable degree of this power to his descendants; and during the greater part of the fifteenth century, the political state of Florence was extremely singular. The appearance of republican government subsisted, the people were passionately attached to it, and on some occasions contended warmly for their privileges, and yet they permitted a single family to assume the direction of their affairs, almost as absolutely as if it had been formally invested with sovereign power. The jealousy of the Medici concurred with the commercial spirit of the Florentines, in putting the military force of the republic upon the same footing with that of the other Italian states. The troops, which the Florentines employed in their

SECT. III. wars, consisted almost entirely of mercenary soldiers, furnished by the *Condottieri*, or leaders of bands, whom they took into their pay.

The constitution of the kingdom of Naples.

IN the kingdom of Naples, to which the sovereignty of the Island of Sicily was annexed, the feudal government was established in the same form, and with the same defects, as in the other nations of Europe. The frequent and violent revolutions which happened in that monarchy, had considerably increased these defects, and rendered them more intolerable. The succession to the crown of Naples had been so often interrupted or altered, and so many Princes of foreign blood had taken possession of the throne, that the Neapolitan nobility had lost, in a great measure, that attachment to the family of their sovereigns, as well as that reverence for their persons, which, in other feudal kingdoms, contributed to set some bounds to the encroachments of the barons upon the royal prerogative and power. At the same time, the different pretenders to the crown, being obliged to court the barons who adhered to them, and on whose support they depended for the success of their claims, they augmented their privileges by liberal concessions, and connived at their boldest usurpations. Even when seated on the throne, it was dangerous for a Prince, who held his sceptre by a disputed title, to venture on any step towards extending his own power, or circumscribing that of the nobles.

FROM



FROM all these causes, the kingdom of Naples SECT. III.  
 was the most turbulent of any in Europe, and the  
 authority of its Monarchs the least extensive.  
 Though Ferdinand I. who began his reign in the  
 year one thousand four hundred and sixty-eight,  
 attempted to break the power of the aristocracy;  
 though his son Alphonso, that he might crush it at  
 once by cutting off the leaders of greatest repu-  
 tation and influence among the Neapolitan barons,  
 ventured to commit one of the most perfidious  
 and cruel actions recorded in history; the order of A. D. 1487.  
 nobles was nevertheless more exasperated than  
 humbled by their measures<sup>f</sup>. The resentment  
 which these outrages excited was so violent, and  
 the power of the malcontent nobles was still so  
 formidable, that to these may be ascribed, in a  
 great degree, the ease and rapidity with which  
 Charles VIII. conquered the kingdom of Naples<sup>g</sup>.

THE event that gave rise to the violent contests State of the  
dispute con-  
cerning the  
right of suc-  
cession to  
the crown.  
 concerning the succession to the crown of Naples  
 and Sicily, which brought so many calamities  
 upon these kingdoms, happened in the thirteenth  
 century. Upon the death of the Emperor Fre-  
 derick II. Manfred his natural son aspiring to the  
 Neapolitan throne, murdered his brother the Em- A. D. 1254.  
 peror Conrad (if we may believe contemporary  
 historians) and by that crime obtained possession of  
 it<sup>h</sup>. The Popes, from their implacable enmity

<sup>f</sup> Giannone, book xxviii. chap. 2. vol. ii. p. 410, &c.

<sup>g</sup> Giannone, *ibid.* p. 414.

<sup>h</sup> Struv. corp. hist. Germ. i. 481. Giannone, book xviii.  
 ch. 5.



SECT. III. to the house of Swabia, not only refused to recognize Manfred's title, but endeavoured to excite against him some rival capable of wresting the sceptre out of his hand. Charles Count of Anjou, the brother of St. Louis King of France, undertook this; and he received from the Popes, the investiture of the kingdom of Naples and Sicily as a fief held of the Holy See. The Count of Anjou's efforts were crowned with success; Manfred fell in battle; and he took possession of the vacant throne. But soon after, Charles sullied the glory which he had acquired, by the injustice and cruelty with which he put to death, by the hands of the executioner, Conradin, the last Prince of the house of Swabia, and the rightful heir of the Neapolitan crown. That gallant young Prince asserted his title, to the last, with a courage, worthy of a better fate. On the scaffold, he declared Peter, at that time Prince, and soon after King of Aragon, who had married Manfred's only daughter, his heir; and throwing his glove among the people, he entreated that it might be carried to Peter as the symbol by which he conveyed all his rights to him<sup>1</sup>. The desire of avenging the insult offered to royalty by the death of Conradin, concurred with ambition, in prompting Peter to take arms in support of the title, which he had acquired. From that period, during almost two centuries, the houses of Aragon and Anjou contended for the crown of Naples. Amidst a succession of revolutions more rapid, as well as of

<sup>1</sup> Giannone, book xix. ch. 4. § 2.

crimes more atrocious, than what occur in the SECT. III. history of almost any other kingdom, Monarchs sometimes of the Aragonese line, and sometimes of the Angevin, were seated on the throne. At length the Princes of the house of Aragon obtained A. D. 1434. such firm possession of this long-disputed inheritance, that they transmitted it quietly to a bastard branch of their family<sup>k</sup>.

THE race of the Angevin Kings, however, was not extinct; nor had they relinquished their title to the Neapolitan crown. The Count of Maine and Provence, the heir of this family, conveyed all his rights and pretensions to Louis XI. and to his successors. Charles VIII, as I have already Pretensions of the French and Spanish Monarchs. related, crossed the Alps at the head of a powerful A. D. 1494. army, in order to prosecute his claim with a degree of vigour far superior to that, which the Princes from whom he derived it, had been capable of exerting. The rapid progress of his arms in Italy, as well as the short time during which he enjoyed the fruits of his success, are well known. Frederick, the heir of the illegitimate branch of the Aragonese family, soon recovered the throne of which Charles had dispossessed him. Louis XII. and Ferdinand of Aragon united against this Prince, whom both, though for different reasons, considered as an usurper, and agreed to divide his dominions between them. Frederick, unable to A. D. 1501. resist the combined Monarchs, each of whom was far his superior in power, resigned his sceptre.

<sup>k</sup> Giannone, book xxvi. ch. 2.

SECT. III Louis and Ferdinand, though they had concurred in making the conquest, differed about the division of it; and from allies became enemies. But Gonzalvo de Cordova, partly by the exertion of such military talents as gave him a just title to the appellation of the *Great Captain*, which the Spanish historians have bestowed upon him; and partly by such shameless and frequent violations of the most solemn engagements, as leave an indelible stain on his memory; stripped the French of all that they possessed in the Neapolitan dominions, and secured the peaceable possession of them to his master. These, together with his other kingdoms, Ferdinand transmitted to his grandson Charles V, whose right to possess them, if not altogether uncontroversible, seems, at least, to be as well founded as that, which the Kings of France set in opposition to it<sup>1</sup>.

State of the  
dutchy of  
Milan, and  
the right of  
succession  
to it.

THERE is nothing in the political constitution, or interior government of the dutchy of Milan, so remarkable, as to require a particular explanation. But as the right of succession to that fertile province was the cause or the pretext of almost all the wars carried on in Italy during the reign of Charles V, it is necessary to trace these disputes to their source, and to inquire into the pretensions of the various competitors.

<sup>1</sup> Droits des Rois de France au Royaume de Sicile. Mem. de Comin. Edit. de Fresnoy, tom. iv. part ii. p. 5.

DURING the long and fierce contests excited in Italy by the violence of the Guelf and Ghibelline factions, the family of Visconti rose to great eminence among their fellow-citizens of Milan. As the Visconti had adhered uniformly to the Ghibelline or Imperial interest, they, by way of recompence, received, from one Emperor, the dignity of perpetual vicars of the Empire in Italy<sup>m</sup>: they were created by another, Dukes of Milan, and together with that title, the possession of the city and its territories was bestowed upon them as an hereditary fief<sup>n</sup>. John King of France, among other expedients for raising money, which the calamities of his reign obliged him to employ, condescended to give one of his daughters in marriage to John Galeazzo Visconti the first duke of Milan, from whom he had received considerable sums. Valentine Visconti, one of the children of this marriage, married her cousin, Louis Duke of Orleans, the only brother of Charles VI. In their marriage contract, which the Pope confirmed, it was stipulated that, upon failure of heirs-male in the family of Visconti, the duchy of Milan should descend to the posterity of Valentine and the Duke of Orleans. That event took place. In the year one thousand four hundred and forty-seven, Philip Maria the last Prince of the ducal family of Visconti died. Various competitors pretended to the succession. Charles Duke of Orleans

SECT. III.

Rise and  
progress of  
the disputes  
concerning  
this.

A. D. 1354.

A. D. 1395.

<sup>m</sup> Petrarch *epist.* ap. Struv. *corp.* i. 625.

<sup>n</sup> Leibnit. *cod. jur. gent. diplom.* vol. i. 257.

pleaded

SECT. III. pleaded his right to it, founded on the marriage-contract of his mother Valentine Visconti. Alfonso King of Naples claimed it in consequence of a will made by Philip Maria in his favour. The Emperor contended that, upon the extinction of male issue in the family of Visconti, the fief returned to the superior Lord, and ought to be re-annexed to the Empire. The people of Milan, smitten with that love of liberty which prevailed among the Italian States, declared against the dominion of any master, and established a republican form of government.

BUT during the struggle among so many competitors, the prize for which they contended was seized by one from whom none of them apprehended any danger. Francis Sforza, the natural son of Jacomuzzo Sforza, whom his courage and abilities had elevated from the rank of a peasant to be one of the most eminent and powerful of the Italian *Condottieri*, having succeeded his father in the command of the adventurers who followed his standard, had married a natural daughter of the last Duke of Milan. Upon this shadow of a title Francis founded his pretensions to the duchy, which he supported with such talents and valour as placed him at last on the ducal throne. The virtues as well as abilities with which he governed, inducing his subjects to forget the defects in his title, he transmitted his dominions quietly to his son; from whom they descended to his grandson. He was murdered by his grand uncle Ludovico, surnamed

furnamed the Moor, who took possession of the dutchy; and his right to it was confirmed by the investiture of the Emperor Maximilian in the year one thousand four hundred and ninety-four °.

Louis XI. who took pleasure in depressing the Princes of the blood, and who admired the political abilities of Francis Sforza, would not permit the Duke of Orleans to take any step in prosecution of his right to the dutchy of Milan. Ludovico the Moor kept up such a close connection with Charles VIII. that, during the greater part of his reign, the claim of the family of Orleans continued to lie dormant. But when the crown of France devolved to Louis XII. Duke of Orleans, he instantly asserted the rights of his family with the ardour which it was natural to expect. Ludovico Sforza, incapable of contending with such a rival, was stripped of all his dominions in the space of a few days. The King, clad in the ducal robes, entered Milan in triumph; and soon after, Ludovico having been betrayed by the Swiss in his pay, was sent a prisoner into France, and shut up in the castle of Loches, where he lay unpitied during the remainder of his days. In consequence of one of the singular revolutions which occur so frequently in the history of the Milanese, his son Maximilian Sforza was placed on the ducal throne, of which he kept possession during the reign of

° Ripalm. hist. Mediol. lib. vi. 1654. ap. Struv. corp. i. 930.  
Du Mont Corps Diplom. tom. iii. p. li. 333. *ibid.*



SECT. III. Louis XII. But his successor Francis I. was too  
 A.D. 1512. high-spirited and enterprizing tamely to relinquish  
 his title. As soon as he was seated upon the  
 throne, he prepared to invade the Milanese; and  
 his right of succession to it, appears from this  
 detail, to have been more natural and more just  
 than that of any other competitor.

It is unnecessary to enter into any detail with  
 respect to the form of government in Genoa,  
 Parma, Modena, and the other inferior States of  
 Italy. Their names, indeed, will often occur in  
 the following history. But the power of these  
 States themselves was so inconsiderable, that their  
 fate depended little upon their own efforts; and  
 the frequent revolutions which they underwent  
 were brought about by the operations of the  
 Princes who attacked or defended them, rather than  
 by any thing peculiar in their internal constitution.

The consti-  
 tution and  
 government  
 of Spain.

Of the great kingdoms on this side of the Alps,  
 Spain is one of the most considerable; and as it  
 was the hereditary domain of Charles V. as well  
 as the chief source of his power and wealth, a  
 distinct knowledge of its political constitution is  
 of capital importance towards understanding the  
 transactions of his reign.

Conquered  
 by the  
 Vandals,

THE Vandals and Goths, who overturned the  
 Roman power in Spain, established a form of  
 government in that country, and brought in cus-  
 toms and laws, perfectly similar to those which  
 were



were introduced into the rest of Europe, by the SECT III.  
 other victorious tribes which acquired settlements  
 there. For some time, society advanced, among  
 the new inhabitants of Spain, by the same steps,  
 and seemed to hold the same course, as in other  
 European nations. To this progress, a sudden A. D. 712.  
 stop was put by the invasion of the Saracens or and by the  
 Moors. The Goths could not withstand the efforts Moors.  
 of their enthusiastick valour, which subdued Spain,  
 with the same impetuous rapidity that distin-  
 guishes all the operations of their arms. The con-  
 querors introduced into the country in which they  
 settled the Mahometan religion, the Arabick lan-  
 guage, the manners of the East, together with  
 that taste for the arts, and that love of elegance  
 and splendour, which the Caliphs had begun to  
 cultivate among their subjects.

SUCH Gothick nobles, as disdained to submit to The Chri-  
 the Moorish yoke, fled for refuge to the inac- stians gra-  
 cessible mountains of Asturias. There they com- dually reco-  
 sorted themselves with enjoying the exercise of ver domi-  
 the Christian religion, and with maintaining the nion in  
 authority of their ancient laws. Being joined by Spain.  
 many of the boldest and most warlike among their  
 countrymen, they sallied out upon the adjacent  
 settlements of the Moors, in small parties; but  
 venturing only upon short excursions at first, they  
 were satisfied with plunder and revenge, without  
 thinking of conquest. By degrees, their strength  
 increased, their views enlarged, a regular govern-  
 ment was established among them, and they began

SECT. III. to aim at extending their territories. While they pushed on their attacks with the unremitting ardour excited by zeal for religion, by the desire of vengeance, and by the hope of rescuing their country from oppression; while they conducted their operations with the courage natural to men who had no other occupation but war, and who were strangers to all the arts which corrupt or enfeeble the mind, the Moors gradually lost many of the advantages, to which they had been indebted for their first success. They threw off all dependence on the Caliphs\*; they neglected to preserve a close connection with their countrymen in Africa; their empire in Spain was split into many small kingdoms; the arts which they cultivated, together with the luxury to which these gave rise, relaxed, in some measure, the force of their military institutions, and abated the vigour of their warlike spirit. The Moors, however, continued still to be a gallant people, and possessed great resources. According to the magnificent stile of the Spanish historians, eight centuries of almost uninterrupted war elapsed, and three thousand seven hundred battles were fought before the last of the Moorish kingdoms in Spain submitted to the Christian arms.

1492.

The union  
of its various  
kingdoms.

As the Christians made their conquests upon the Mahometans at various periods, and under different leaders, each formed the territory which he had wrested from the common enemy, into an

\* Jos. Sim. Assemanni *Histor. Ital. Scriptores*, vol. iii. p. 135.

independent

independent State. Spain was divided into as many separate kingdoms, as it contained provinces; in each city of note, a petty Monarch established his throne, and assumed all the ensigns of royalty. In a series of years, however, by the usual events of intermarriages, or legal succession, or conquest, all these inferior principalities were annexed to the more powerful kingdoms of Castile and of Aragon. At length, by the fortunate marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella, the former the hereditary Monarch of Aragon, and the latter raised to the throne of Castile by the affection of her subjects, all the Spanish crowns were united, and descended in the same line, SECT. III.  
1481.

FROM this period, the political constitution of Spain began to assume a regular and uniform appearance; the genius of government may be delineated, and the progress of its laws and manners may be traced with certainty. Notwithstanding the singular revolution which the invasion of the Moors occasioned in Spain, and the peculiarity of its fate, in being so long subjected to the Mahometan yoke, the customs introduced by the Vandals and Goths had taken such deep root, and were so thoroughly incorporated with the frame of its government, that in every province which the Christians recovered from the Moors, we find the condition of individuals, as well as the political constitution, nearly the same as in other nations of Europe. Lands were held by the same tenure; justice was dispensed in the same form; the same privileges

Their ancient customs and laws reserved amidst all their revolutions;

## SECT. III.

which renders their state in some degree similar to that of other nations of Europe.

privileges were claimed by the nobility; and the same power exercised by the Cortes, or general assembly of the kingdom. Several circumstances contributed to secure this permanence of the feudal institutions in Spain, notwithstanding the conquest of the Moors, which seemed to have overturned them. Such of the Spaniards, as preserved their independence, adhered to their ancient customs, not only from attachment to them, but out of antipathy to the Moors, to whose ideas concerning property and government these customs were totally repugnant. Even among the Christians, who submitted to the Moorish conquerors, and consented to become their subjects, ancient customs were not entirely abolished. They were permitted to retain their religion; their laws concerning private property; their forms of administering justice; and their mode of levying taxes. The followers of Mahomet are the only enthusiasts, who have united the spirit of toleration with zeal for making proselytes, and who, at the same time that they took arms to propagate the doctrine of their prophet, permitted such as would not embrace it, to adhere to their own tenets, and to practise their own rites. To this peculiarity in the genius of the Mahometan religion, as well as to the desire which the Moors had of reconciling the Christians to their yoke, it was owing that the ancient manners and laws in Spain survived the violent shock of a conquest, and were permitted to subsist, notwithstanding the introduction of a new religion and

and a new form of government into that country. SECT. III.  
 It is obvious from all these particulars, that the Christians must have found it extremely easy to re-establish manners and government on their ancient foundations in those provinces of Spain which they wrested successively from the Moors. A considerable part of the people retained such a fondness for the customs, and such a reverence for the laws of their ancestors, that wishing to see them completely restored, they were not only willing but eager to resume the former, and to recognize the authority of the latter.

BUT though the feudal form of government, with all the institutions which characterize it, was thus preserved entire in Castile and Aragon, as well as in all the kingdoms which depended on these crowns, there were certain peculiarities in their political constitutions which distinguish them from those of any other country in Europe. The royal prerogative, extremely limited in every feudal kingdom, was circumscribed, in Spain, within such narrow bounds, as reduced the power of the sovereign almost to nothing. The privileges of the nobility were vast in proportion, and extended so far, as to border on absolute independence. The immunities of the cities were great, they possessed considerable influence in the Cortes, and they aspired at obtaining more. Such a state of society, in which the political machine was so ill adjusted, and the several members of the legislature so im-

Certain peculiarities in their constitution and laws.

The prerogative more limited, and the immunities of the people more extensive.

SECT. III. properly balanced, produced interior disorders in the kingdoms of Spain, which rose beyond the pitch of turbulence and anarchy, usual under the feudal government. The whole tenor of the Spanish history confirms the truth of this observation; and when the mutinous spirit, to which the genius of their policy gave birth and vigour, was no longer restrained and overawed by the immediate dread of the Moorish arms, it broke out into more frequent insurrections against the government of their Princes, as well as more outrageous insults on their dignity, than occur in the annals of any other country. These were accompanied at some times with more liberal sentiments concerning the rights of the people, at other times with more elevated notions concerning the privileges of the nobles, than were common in other nations.

Instances  
of this.

A. D. 1462. In the principality of Catalonia, which was annexed to the kingdom of Aragon, the impatience of the people to obtain the redress of their grievances having prompted them to take arms against their sovereign John II, they, by a solemn deed, recalled the oath of allegiance which they had sworn to him, declared him and his posterity to be unworthy of the throne<sup>p</sup>, and endeavoured to establish a republican form of government, in order to secure the perpetual enjoyment of that

<sup>p</sup> Zurita Anales de Arag. tom. iv. 113, 115, &c.

liberty,




liberty, after which they aspired<sup>a</sup>. Nearly about SECT. III.  
 the same period, the indignation of the Castilian nobility against the weak and flagitious administration of Henry IV, having led them to combine against him, they arrogated, as one of the privileges belonging to their order, the right of trying and of passing sentence on their sovereign. That the exercise of this power might be as publick and solemn, as the pretension to it was bold, they summoned all the nobility of their party to meet A. D. 1455.  
 at Avila; a spacious theatre was erected in a plain without the walls of the town, an image representing the King, was seated on a throne, clad in royal robes, with a crown on its head, a sceptre in its hand, and the sword of justice by its side. The accusation against the King was read, and the sentence of deposition was pronounced, in presence of a numerous assembly. At the close of the first article of the charge, the archbishop of Toledo advanced, and tore the crown from the head of the image; at the close of the second, the Conde de Placentia snatched the sword of justice from its side; at the close of the third, the Conde de Beneventè wrested the sceptre from its hand; at the close of the last, Don Diego Lopes de Stuniga tumbled it headlong from the throne. At the same instant, Don Alfonso, Henry's brother, was proclaimed King of Castile and Leon in his stead<sup>r</sup>.

<sup>a</sup> Ferreras hist. d'Espagne, tom. vii. p. 92. P. Orleans Revol. d'Espagne, tom. iii. p. 155. L. Marinæus Siculus de reb. Hispan. apud Schotti Script. Hispan. fol. 429.

<sup>r</sup> Marian. hist. lib. xxiii. c. 9.



**SECT. III.**  THE most daring leaders of faction would not have ventured on these measures, nor have conducted them with such publick ceremony, if the sentiments of the people concerning the royal dignity, had not been so formed by the laws and policy, to which they were accustomed both in Castile and Catalonia, as prepared them to approve of such extraordinary proceedings, or to acquiesce in them.

The constitution and government of Aragon.

IN Aragon, the form of government was monarchical, but the genius and maxims of it were purely republican. The Kings, who were long elective, retained only the shadow of power; the real exercise of it was in the Cortes or parliament of the kingdom. This supreme assembly was composed of four different *arms* or members. The nobility of the first rank. The Equestrian order, or nobility of the second class. The representatives of the cities and towns, whose right to a place in the Cortes, if we may give credit to the historians of Aragon, was coeval with the constitution. The ecclesiastical order, composed of the dignitaries of the church, together with the representatives of the inferior clergy\*. No law could pass in this assembly without the assent of every single member who had a right to vote†. Without the permission of the Cortes, no tax could be imposed; no war could be declared; no peace concluded; no money could be coined; nor any alteration be

\* Forma de celebrar. Cortes en Aragon. por Geron. Martel.

† Martel. *ibid.* p. 2.

made in the current specie<sup>u</sup>. The power of re-  
viewing the proceedings of all inferior courts, the  
privilege of inspecting every department of ad-  
ministration, and the right of redressing all griev-  
ances, belonged to the Cortes. Nor did those who  
conceived themselves to be aggrieved, address the  
Cortes in the humble tone of supplicants, and pe-  
tition for redress; they demanded it as the birth-  
right of freemen, and required the guardians of  
their liberty to decide with respect to the points  
which they laid before them<sup>x</sup>. This sovereign  
court was held, during several centuries, every  
year; but, in consequence of a regulation intro-  
duced about the beginning of the fourteenth cen-  
tury, it was convoked from that period only once  
in two years. After it was assembled, the King  
had no right to prorogue or dissolve it without its  
own consent; and the session continued forty days<sup>y</sup>.

SECT. III.

Not satisfied with having erected such formida-  
ble barriers against the encroachments of the royal  
prerogative, nor willing to commit the guardianship  
of their liberties to the vigilance and authority of  
an assembly, similar to the diets, states-general, and  
parliaments, in which the other feudal nations  
placed so much confidence, the Aragonese had re-  
course to an institution peculiar to themselves, and  
elected a *Justiza* or supreme judge. This magis-

Office and  
jurisdiction  
of the  
Justiza.

<sup>u</sup> Hier. Blanca comment. rer. Aragon. ap. Schot. Script. Hispan. vol. iii. p. 750.

<sup>x</sup> Martel, Forma de Celebr. p. 2.

<sup>y</sup> Hier. Blanca comment. 763.

SECT. III. trate, whose office bore some resemblance to that of the Ephori in ancient Sparta, acted as the protector of the people, and the comptroller of the Prince. The person of the Justiza was sacred, his power and jurisdiction almost unbounded. He was the supreme interpreter of the laws. Not only inferior judges, but the Kings themselves were bound to consult him in every doubtful case, and to receive his responses with implicit deference \*. An appeal lay to him from the royal judges, as well as from those appointed by the barons within their respective territories. Even when no appeal was made to him, he could interpose by his own authority, prohibit the ordinary judge to proceed, take immediate cognizance of the cause himself, and remove the party accused to the *Manifestation* or prison of the state, to which no person had access but by his permission. His power was exerted with no less vigour and effect in superintending the administration of government, than in regulating the course of justice. It was the prerogative of the Justiza to inspect the conduct of the King. He had a title to review all the royal proclamations and patents, and to declare whether or not they were agreeable to law, and ought to be carried into execution. He, by his sole authority, could exclude any of the King's ministers from the conduct of affairs, and call them to answer for

\* Blanca has preserved two responses of the Justiza to James II. who reigned towards the close of the thirteenth century, Blanca 748.

their mal-administration. He himself was accountable to the Cortes alone, for the manner in which he discharged the duties of this high office, and performed functions of the greatest importance that could be committed to a subject [HH] <sup>2</sup>.

SECT. III.

It is evident from a bare enumeration of the privileges of the Aragonese Cortes, as well as of the rights belonging to the Justiza, that a very small portion of power remained in the hands of the King. The Aragonese seem to have been solicitous that their monarchs should know and feel this state of impotence, to which they were reduced. Even in swearing allegiance to their sovereign, an act which ought, naturally, to be accompanied with professions of submission and respect, they devised an oath, in such a form, as to remind him of his dependence on his subjects. "We," said the Justiza to the King in name of his high-spirited barons, "who are each of us as good, and who are altogether more powerful than you, promise obedience to your government, if you maintain our rights and liberties; but if not, not." Conformably to this oath, they established it as a fundamental article in their constitution, that if the King should violate their rights and privileges, it was lawful for the people to disclaim him as their sovereign, and to elect another, even though a heathen, in his place <sup>a</sup>. The attachment of the

The regal power circumscribed within narrow limits.

[HH] NOTE XXXI.

<sup>a</sup> Hier. Blanca Comment. p. 747—755.

<sup>a</sup> Hier. Blanca Comment. 720.

SECT. III. Aragonese to this singular constitution of government, was extreme, and their respect for it approached to superstitious veneration [II]. In the preamble to one of their laws, they declare, that such was the barrenness of their country, and the poverty of the inhabitants, that, if it were not on account of the liberties by which they were distinguished from other nations, the people would abandon it, and go in quest of a settlement to some more fruitful region <sup>b</sup>.

Constitution  
and Government of  
Castile.

IN Castile, there were not such peculiarities in the form of government, as to establish any remarkable distinction between it and that of the other European nations. The executive part of government was committed to the King, but with a prerogative extremely limited. The legislative authority resided in the Cortes, which was composed of the nobility, the dignified ecclesiastics, and the representatives of the cities. The assembly of the Cortes in Castile was very ancient, and seems to have been coeval with the constitution. The members of the three different orders, who had a right of suffrage, met in one place, and deliberated as one collective body; the decisions of which were regulated by the sentiments of the majority. The right of imposing taxes, of enacting laws, and of redressing grievances belonged to this assembly; and in order to secure the assent of the King to such statutes and regulations as were deem-

[II] NOTE XXXII.

<sup>b</sup> Hier. Blanca Com. p. 751.

ed salutary or beneficial to the kingdom, it was usual in the Cortes, to take no step towards granting money, until all business relative to the public welfare was concluded. The representatives of cities seem to have obtained a seat very early in the Cortes of Castile, and soon acquired such influence and credit, as were very uncommon, at a period when the splendor and pre-eminence of the nobility had eclipsed or annihilated all other orders of men. The number of members from cities bore such a proportion to that of the whole collective body, as rendered them extremely respectable in the Cortes [KK]. The degree of consideration, which they possessed in the state, may be estimated by one event. Upon the death of John I. a council of regency was appointed to govern the kingdom during the minority of his son. It was composed of an equal number of noblemen, and of deputies chosen by the cities; the latter were admitted to the same rank, and invested with the same powers, as prelates and grandees of the first order<sup>c</sup>. But though the members of communities in Castile were elevated above the condition wherein they were placed in other kingdoms of Europe; though they had attained to such political importance, that even the proud and jealous spirit of the feudal aristocracy could not exclude them from a considerable share in government; yet the nobles, notwithstanding these acquisitions of the commons, continued to assert the privileges of

[KK] NOTE XXXIII.

<sup>c</sup> Marian. hist. lib. xviii. c. 15.

SECT. III. their order, in opposition to the crown, in a tone extremely high. There was not any body of nobility in Europe more distinguished for independence of spirit, haughtiness of deportment, and bold pretensions, than that of Castile. The history of that monarchy affords the most striking examples of the vigilance with which they observed, and of the vigour with which they opposed every scheme of their Kings, that tended to encroach on their jurisdiction, to diminish their dignity, or to abridge their power. Even in their ordinary intercourse with their Monarchs, they preserved such a consciousness of their rank, that the nobles of the first order claimed it as a privilege to be covered in the royal presence, and approached their sovereigns rather as equals than as subjects.

THE constitution of the subordinate monarchies, which depended on the crowns of Castile and Aragon, nearly resembled that of the kingdom to which they were annexed. In all of them, the dignity and independence of the nobles were great; the immunities and power of the cities were considerable.

Various  
causes of  
the limited  
authority of  
the Spanish  
Monarchs,

AN attentive observation of the singular situation of Spain, as well as the various events which occurred there, from the invasion of the Moors to the union of its kingdoms under Ferdinand and Isabella, will discover the causes to which all the peculiarities in its political constitution I have pointed out, ought to be ascribed.



As the provinces of Spain were wrested from the Mahometans gradually and with difficulty, the nobles, who followed the standard of any eminent leader in these wars, conquered not for him alone, but for themselves. They claimed a share in the lands which their valour had torn from the enemy, and their prosperity and power increased, in proportion as the territory of the Prince extended.

DURING their perpetual wars with the Moors, the Monarchs of Spain depended so much on their nobles, that it became necessary to conciliate their good will by successive grants of new honours and privileges. By the time that any Prince could establish his dominion in a conquered province, the greater part of the property was parcelled out by him among his barons, with such jurisdiction and immunities, as raised them almost to sovereign power.

AT the same time, the kingdoms erected in so many different corners of Spain, were extremely inconsiderable. The petty monarch was but little elevated above his nobles. They, feeling themselves to be almost his equals, acted as such. The Kings of such limited domains could neither command much respect, nor possess great power; and noblemen, so nearly on the same level, could not look up to them with that reverence, with which the sovereigns of the great monarchies in Europe were viewed by their subjects [LL].

[LL] NOTE XXXIV.

THESE

SECT. III. THESE circumstances concurred in exalting the nobility, and in depressing the royal authority; there were other causes which raised the cities in Spain to consideration and power.

As the open country, during the wars with the Moors, was perpetually exposed to the excursions of the enemy, with whom no peace or truce was so permanent as to prove any lasting security, self-preservation obliged persons of all ranks to fix their residence in places of strength. The castles of the barons, which, in other countries, afforded a commodious retreat from the depredations of banditti, or from the transient violence of any interior commotion, were unable to resist an enemy whose operations were conducted with regular and persevering vigour. Cities, in which great numbers united for their mutual defence, were the only places in which people could fix their residence with any prospect of safety. To this was owing the rapid growth of those cities in Spain of which the Christians recovered possession. All who fled from the Moorish yoke resorted to them, as to an asylum; and there, the greater part of those who took the field against the Mahometans, established their families.

EACH of these cities, during a longer or shorter course of years, was the capital of a little state, and enjoyed all the advantages which accelerate the increase of inhabitants in every place that is the seat of government.

THE number of cities in Spain, at the beginning of the fifteenth century, was considerable, and they were peopled far beyond the proportion which was common in other parts of Europe, except in Italy and the Low-Countries. The Moors had introduced manufactures into those cities, while under their dominion. The Christians, who, by intermixture with them, had learned their arts, continued to cultivate these. The trade of several of the Spanish towns appears to have been considerable; and the spirit of commerce continued to preserve the number of their inhabitants, as the sense of danger had first induced them to crowd together.

As the Spanish cities were populous, many of the inhabitants were of a rank superior to those who resided in towns in other countries of Europe. That cause, which contributed chiefly to their population, affected equally persons of every condition, who flocked thither promiscuously, in order to find shelter, or in hopes of making a stand there against the enemy, with greater advantage than in any other station. The persons elected as their representatives in the Cortes by the cities, or promoted to offices of trust and dignity in the government of the community, were often, as will appear from transactions which I shall hereafter relate, of such considerable rank in the kingdom, as reflected lustre on their constituents, and on the stations wherein they were placed.

**SECT. III.** As it was impossible to carry on a continual war against the Moors, without some other military force, than that which the barons were obliged to bring into the field, in consequence of the feudal tenures, it became necessary to have some troops, particularly a body of light cavalry, in constant pay. It was one of the privileges of the nobles, that their lands were exempt from the burden of taxes. The charge of supporting the troops requisite for the publick safety, fell wholly upon the cities; and their Kings, being obliged frequently to apply to them for aid, found it necessary to gain their favour by concessions, which not only extended their immunities, but added to their wealth and power.

WHEN the influence of all these circumstances, peculiar to Spain, is added to the general and common causes, which contributed to aggrandize cities in other countries of Europe, this will fully account for the extensive privileges which they acquired, as well as for the extraordinary consideration to which they attained, in all the Spanish kingdoms [MM].

Measures of  
different  
Princes in  
order to ex-  
tend their  
power;

By these exorbitant privileges of the nobility, and this unusual power of the cities in Spain, the royal prerogative was hemmed in on every side, and reduced within very narrow bounds. Sensible of this, and impatient of such restraint, different Monarchs endeavoured, at various junctures, to enlarge their own jurisdiction, and to circumscribe

[MM] NOTE XXXV.

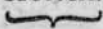
that

that of their subjects. Their power, however, or SECT. III.  
 their abilities, were so unequal to the undertaking,  
 that their efforts were attended with little success.

But when Ferdinand and Isabella found themselves particularly  
of Ferdi-  
nand and  
Isabella.  
 at the head of the united kingdoms of Spain,  
 and delivered from the danger and interruption  
 of domestic wars, they were not only in a con-  
 dition to resume, but were able to prosecute with  
 advantage, the schemes of extending the preroga-  
 tive, which their ancestors had attempted in vain.  
 Ferdinand's profound sagacity in concerting his  
 measures, his persevering industry in conducting  
 them, and his uncommon address in carrying them  
 into execution, fitted him admirably for an under-  
 taking which required all these talents.

As the overgrown power, and high pretensions Ferdinand's  
different  
schemes for  
abridging  
the privi-  
leges and  
power of the  
nobility.  
 of the nobility were what the Monarchs of Spain  
 felt most sensibly, and bore with the greatest im-  
 patience, the great object of Ferdinand's policy  
 was to reduce these within more moderate bounds.

Under various pretexts, sometimes by violence,  
 more frequently in consequence of decrees ob-  
 tained in the courts of law, he wrested from the  
 barons a great part of the lands, which had been  
 granted to them by the inconsiderate bounty of  
 former Monarchs, particularly during the feeble  
 and profuse reign of his predecessor Henry IV.  
 He did not give the entire conduct of affairs to  
 persons of noble birth, who were accustomed to  
 occupy every department of importance in peace  
 or in war, as if it had been a privilege peculiar to

**SECT. III.**  their order, to be employed as the sole counsellors and ministers of the crown. He often transacted business of great consequence without their intervention, and committed many offices of power and trust to new men, devoted to his interest<sup>d</sup>. He introduced a degree of state and dignity into his court, which being unknown in Spain, while it remained split into many small kingdoms, taught the nobles to approach their sovereign with more ceremony, and gradually rendered him the object of greater deference and respect.

Particularly  
by annexing  
the grand-  
masterships  
of the three  
orders to the  
crown ;

THE annexing the masterships of the three military orders of St. Jago, Calatrava, and Alcantara, to the crown, was another expedient, by which Ferdinand greatly augmented the revenue and power of the Kings of Spain. These orders were instituted in imitation of those of the Knights Templars and of St. John of Jerusalem, on purpose to wage perpetual war with the Mahometans, and to protect the pilgrims who visited Compostella, or other places of eminent sanctity in Spain. The zeal and superstition of the ages, in which they were founded, prompted persons of every rank to bestow such liberal donations on those holy warriors, that, in a short time, they engrossed a considerable share in the property and wealth of the kingdom. The masterships of these orders came to be stations of the greatest power and opulence to which a Spanish nobleman could be advanced. These high dignities were in the disposal

of the Knights of the Order, and placed the persons on whom they conferred them almost on a level with their sovereign [NN]. Ferdinand, unwilling that the nobility, whom he considered as already too formidable, should derive such additional credit and influence from possessing the government of these wealthy fraternities, was solicitous to wrest it out of their hands, and to vest it in the crown. His measures for accomplishing this, were wisely planned, and executed with vigour<sup>e</sup>. By address, by promises, and by threats, he prevailed on the Knights of each Order to place Isabella and him at the head of it. Innocent VIII. and Alexander VI. gave this election the sanction of papal authority<sup>f</sup>; and subsequent Pontiffs rendered the annexation of these master-ships to the crown perpetual.

SECT. III.

A. D. 1476.  
and 1493.

WHILE Ferdinand, by this measure, diminished the power and influence of the nobility, and added new lustre or authority to the crown, he was taking other important steps with a view to the same object. The sovereign jurisdiction which the feudal barons exercised within their own territories, was the pride and distinction of their order. To have invaded openly a privilege which they prized so highly, and in defence of which they would

And by circumscribing the jurisdiction of the nobility.

## [NN] NOTE XXXVI.

<sup>e</sup> Marian. hist. lib. xxv. c. 5.<sup>f</sup> Zurita anales, tom. v. p. 22. Ælii Anton. Nebrissenfis rerum a Ferdinand & Elizabe gestarum decades ii. apud Schor. script. Hispan. i. 260.



SECT. III. have run so eagerly to arms, was a measure too daring for a Prince of Ferdinand's cautious temper. He took advantage, however, of an opportunity which the state of his kingdoms and the spirit of his people presented him, in order to undermine what he durst not assault. The incessant depredations of the Moors, the want of discipline among the troops which were employed to oppose them, the frequent civil wars between the crown and the nobility, as well as the undiscerning rage with which the barons carried on their private wars with each other, filled all the provinces of Spain with disorder. Rapine, outrage, and murder, became so common, as not only to interrupt commerce, but in a great measure to suspend all intercourse between one place and another. That security and protection which men expect from entering into civil society, ceased almost totally. Interior order and police, while the feudal institutions remained in vigour, were so little objects of attention, and the administration of justice was so extremely feeble, that it would have been vain to have expected relief from the established laws of the ordinary judges. But the evil became so intolerable, and the inhabitants of cities, who were the chief sufferers, grew so impatient of this anarchy, that self-preservation forced them to have recourse to an extraordinary remedy. About the middle of the thirteenth century, the cities in the kingdom of Aragon, and after their example those in Castile, formed themselves into an association,

ciation, distinguished by the name of the *Holy Brotherhood*. They exacted a certain contribution from each of the associated towns; they levied a considerable body of troops, in order to protect travellers, and to pursue criminals; they appointed judges, who opened their courts in various parts of the kingdom. Whoever was guilty of murder, robbery, or of any act that violated the publick peace, and was seized by the troops of the *Brotherhood*, was carried before judges of their nomination, who, without paying any regard to the exclusive and sovereign jurisdiction which the lord of the place might claim, tried and condemned the criminals. By means of this, the prompt and impartial administration of justice was restored; and together with it, internal tranquillity and order began to return. The nobles alone murmured at this salutary institution. They complained of it as an encroachment on one of their most valuable privileges. They remonstrated against it in an high tone; and, on some occasions, refused to grant any aid to the crown, unless it were abolished. Ferdinand, however, was sensible not only of the good effects of the Holy Brotherhood with respect to the police of his kingdoms, but perceived its tendency to abridge, and at length to annihilate the territorial jurisdiction of the nobility. He countenanced the institution on every occasion. He supported it with the whole force of royal authority; and besides the expedients employed by him in common with the other monarchs of Eu-

SECT. III. rope, he availed himself of this institution, which was peculiar to his kingdom, in order to limit and abolish that independent jurisdiction of the nobility, which was no less inconsistent with the authority of the Prince, than with the order of society [OO].

Notwithstanding all these, the government of Spain still extremely free.

BUT though Ferdinand by these measures considerably enlarged the boundaries of prerogative, and acquired a degree of influence and power far beyond what any of his predecessors had enjoyed, yet the limitations of the royal authority, as well as the barriers against its encroachments, continued to be many and strong. The spirit of liberty was vigorous among the people of Spain; the spirit of independence was high among the nobility; and though the love of glory, peculiar to the Spaniards in every period of their history, prompted them to support Ferdinand with zeal in his foreign operations, and to afford him such aid as enabled him not only to undertake but to execute great enterprizes; he reigned over his subjects with a jurisdiction less extensive than that of any of the great monarchs in Europe. It will appear from many passages in the following history, that, during a considerable part of the reign of his successor Charles V. the prerogative of the Spanish crown was equally circumscribed.

Constitution and government of France.

THE ancient government and laws in France so nearly resembled those of the other feudal king-

[OO] NOTE XXXVII.

doms,

doms, that such a detail with respect to them as SECT. III.  
 was necessary, in order to convey some idea of the  
 nature and effects of the peculiar institutions which  
 took place in Spain, would be superfluous. In  
 the view which I have exhibited of the means by  
 which the French monarchs acquired such full  
 command of the national force of their kingdom,  
 as enabled them to engage in extensive schemes of  
 foreign operation, I have already pointed out the  
 great steps by which they advanced towards a  
 more ample possession of political power, and a  
 more uncontrouled exercise of their royal prerogative. All that now remains is to take notice of  
 such particulars in the constitution of France, as  
 serve either to distinguish it from that of other  
 countries, or tend to throw any light on the trans-  
 actions of that period to which the following  
 history extends.

UNDER the French monarchs of the first race, Power of  
the General  
Assemblies  
under the  
first race of  
Kings.  
 the royal prerogative was very inconsiderable. The General Assemblies of the nation, which met  
 annually at stated seasons, extended their authority  
 to every department of government. The power  
 of electing Kings, of enacting laws, of redressing  
 grievances, of conferring donations on the Prince,  
 of passing judgment in the last resort, with respect  
 to every person and to every cause, resided in  
 this great convention of the nation. Under Under the  
second.  
 the second race of Kings, notwithstanding the  
 power and splendour which the conquests of  
 Charlemagne added to the crown, the general  
 assemblies

SECT. III. assemblies of the nations continued to possess extensive authority. The right of determining which of the royal family should be placed on the throne, was vested in them. The Princes elevated to that dignity by their suffrage were accustomed regularly to call and to consult them with respect to every affair of importance to the state, and without their consent no law was passed, and no new tax was levied.

Under the  
third.

BUT, by the time that Hugh Capet, the father of the third race of Kings, took possession of the throne of France, such changes had happened in the political state of the kingdom, as considerably affected the power and jurisdiction of the general assembly of the nation. The royal authority in the hands of the degenerate posterity of Charlemagne, had dwindled into insignificance and contempt. Every considerable proprietor of land had formed his territory into a barony, almost independent of the sovereign. The dukes or governors of provinces, the counts or governors of towns and small districts, and the great officers of the crown, had rendered these dignities, originally granted only during pleasure or for life, hereditary in their families. Each of these had usurped all the rights which hitherto had been deemed the distinctions of royalty, particularly the privileges of dispensing justice within their own domains, of coining money, and of waging war. Every district was governed by local customs, acknowledged a distinct lord, and pursued a separate interest. The formality of doing homage to their sovereign, was almost

almost the only act of subjection, which haughty SECT. III.  
 barons would perform, and that bound them no  
 farther than they were willing to acknowledge its  
 obligation [PP].

IN a kingdom broken into so many independent baronies, hardly any common principle of union remained; and the general assembly in its deliberations could scarcely consider the nation as forming one body, or establish common regulations to be of equal force in every part. Within the immediate domains of the crown the King might publish laws, and they were obeyed, because there he was acknowledged as the only lord. But if he had aimed at rendering these general, that would have alarmed the barons as an encroachment upon the independence of their jurisdiction. The barons, with no less care, avoided the enacting of general laws, because the execution of them must have been vested in the King, and would have enlarged that paramount power, which was the object of their jealousy. Thus under the descendants of Hugh Capet, the States General (for that was the name by which the supreme assembly of the French nation came then to be distinguished) lost their legislative authority, or at least entirely relinquished the exercise of it. From that period, the jurisdiction of the States General extended no farther than to the imposition of new taxes, the determination of questions with respect to the right of succession

The power  
 of the General Assembly  
 less considerable and  
 extensive.



SECT. III. to the crown, the settling of the regency when the preceding monarch had not fixed it by his will, and the presenting remonstrances enumerating the grievances of which the nation wished to obtain redress.

As, during several centuries the monarchs of Europe seldom demanded extraordinary subsidies of their subjects, and the other events which required the interposition of the States, rarely occurred, their meetings in France were not frequent. They were summoned occasionally by their Kings, when compelled by their wants or by their fears to have recourse to their aid; but they did not, like the Diet in Germany, the Cortes in Spain, or the Parliament in England, form an essential member of the constitution, the regular exertion of whose powers was requisite to give vigour and order to government.

The crown  
begins to ac-  
quire legis-  
lative au-  
thority,

WHEN the States of France ceased to exercise legislative authority, the Kings began to assume it. They ventured at first on acts of legislation with great reserve; and after taking every precaution that could prevent their subjects from being alarmed at the exercise of a new power. They did not at once issue their ordinances in a tone of authority and command. They treated with their subjects; they pointed out what was best; and allured them to comply with it. By degrees, however, as the prerogative of the crown extended, and as the supreme jurisdiction of the royal courts came to be established,



established, the Kings of France assumed more SECT. III.  
 openly the stile and authority of law-givers; and  
 before the beginning of the fifteenth century,  
 the complete legislative power was vested in  
 them [QQ].

HAVING secured this important acquisition, the and the  
power of  
levying  
taxes.  
 steps which led to the right of imposing taxes were  
 rendered few and easy. The people, accustomed to  
 see their sovereigns, by their sole authority, issue  
 ordinances which regulated points of the greatest  
 consequence with respect to the property of their  
 subjects, were not alarmed when they were required,  
 by the royal edicts, to contribute certain sums to-  
 wards supplying the exigencies of government, and  
 carrying forward the measures of the nation. When  
 Charles VII. and Louis XI. first ventured to exer-  
 cise this new power, in the manner which I have  
 already described, the gradual increase of the royal  
 authority had so imperceptibly prepared the minds  
 of the people of France for this innovation, that it  
 excited no commotion in the kingdom, and seems  
 scarcely to have given rise to any murmur or  
 complaint,

WHEN the Kings of France had thus engrossed Govern-  
ment of  
France be-  
comes  
purely mo-  
narchical.  
 every power which can be exerted in government;  
 when the right of making laws, of levying money,  
 of keeping an army of mercenaries in constant  
 pay, of declaring war and of concluding peace

[QQ] NOTE XXXIX.

SECT. III. centered in the crown, the constitution of the kingdom, which, under the first race of Kings, was nearly democratical, which, under the second race, became an aristocracy, terminated, under the third race, in a pure monarchy. Every thing that tended to preserve the appearance, or revive the memory of the ancient mixed government, seems from that period to have been industriously avoided. During the long and active reign of Francis I. the variety as well as extent of whose operations obliged him to lay many heavy impositions on his subjects, the States-General of France were not once assembled, nor were the people once allowed to exert the power of taxing themselves, which, according to the original ideas of feudal government, was a right essential to every freeman.

The exercise of prerogative restrained by the privileges of the nobility;

Two things, however, remained, which moderated the exercise of the regal prerogative, and restrained it within such bounds as preserved the constitution of France from degenerating into mere despotism. The rights and privileges claimed by the nobility, must be considered as one barrier against the absolute dominion of the crown. Though the nobles of France had lost that political power which was vested in their order as a body, they still retained the personal rights and pre-eminence which they derived from their rank. They preserved a consciousness of elevation above other classes of citizens; an exemption from burdens to which they were subject; a contempt of the occupations in which they were engaged; the privilege

privilege of assuming ensigns that indicated their SECT. III.  
 dignity; a right to be treated with a certain degree  
 of deference during peace; and a claim to various  
 distinctions when in the field. Many of these pre-  
 tensions were not founded on the words of statutes,  
 or derived from positive laws; they were defined  
 and ascertained by the maxims of honour, a title  
 more delicate, but no less sacred. These rights,  
 established and protected by a principle equally vi-  
 gilant in guarding, and intrepid in defending them,  
 are to the Sovereign himself objects of respect and  
 veneration. Wherever they stand in its way, the  
 royal prerogative is bounded. The violence of a  
 Despot may exterminate such an order of men;  
 but as long as it subsists, and its ideas of personal  
 distinction remain entire, the power of the Prince  
 has limits <sup>2</sup>.

As in France, the body of nobility was very nu-  
 merous, and the individuals of which it was com-  
 posed retained an high sense of their own pre-emi-  
 nence, to this we may ascribe, in a great measure,  
 the mode of exercising the royal prerogative which  
 peculiarly distinguishes the government of that  
 kingdom. An intermediate order was placed be-  
 tween the Monarch and his other subjects, and in  
 every act of authority it became necessary to attend  
 to its privileges, and not only to guard against any  
 real violation of these, but to avoid any suspicion  
 of its being possible that they might be violated.

<sup>2</sup> De l'Esprit des Loix, liv. ii. c. 4. Dr. Ferguson's Essay  
 on the Hist. of Civil Society, part i. sect. 10.


Thus

**SECT. III.** Thus a species of government was established in France, unknown in the ancient world, that of a monarchy, in which the power of the sovereign, though unconfined by any legal or constitutional restraint, has certain bounds set to it by the ideas which one class of his subjects entertain concerning their own dignity.

and by the jurisdiction of the parliaments, particularly that of Paris.

THE jurisdiction of the Parliaments in France, particularly that of Paris, was the other barrier which served to confine the exercise of the royal prerogative within certain limits. The parliament of Paris was originally the court of the Kings of France, to which they committed the supreme administration of justice within their own domains, as well as the power of deciding with respect to all cases brought before it by appeals from the courts of the barons. When, in consequence of events and regulations which have been mentioned formerly, the time and place of its meeting were fixed, when not only the form of its procedure, but the principles on which it decided, were rendered regular and consistent, when every cause of importance was finally determined there, and when the people became accustomed to resort thither as to the supreme temple of justice, the parliament of Paris rose to high estimation in the kingdom, its members acquired dignity, and its decrees were submitted to with deference. Nor was this the only source of the power and influence which the parliament obtained. The Kings of France, when they first began to assume the legislative power, in order

order to reconcile the minds of their people to this new exertion of prerogative, produced their edicts and ordinances in the parliament of Paris, that they might be approved of and registered there, before they were published and declared to be of authority in the kingdom. During the intervals between the meetings of the States-General of the kingdom, or under those reigns when the States-General were not assembled, the monarchs of France were accustomed to consult the parliament of Paris with respect to the most arduous affairs of government, and frequently regulated their conduct by its advice, in declaring war, in concluding peace, and in other transactions of publick concern. Thus there was erected in the kingdom a tribunal which became the great depository of the laws, and by the uniform tenour of its decrees, it established principles of justice and forms of proceeding which were considered as so sacred, that even the sovereign power of the Monarch durst not venture to disregard or to violate them. The members of this illustrious body, though they neither possess legislative authority, nor can be considered as the representatives of the people, have availed themselves of the reputation and influence which they had acquired among their countrymen, in order to make a stand to the utmost of their ability against every unprecedented and exorbitant exertion of the prerogative. In every period of the French history, they have merited the praise of being the vir-

SECT. III.  tuous but feeble guardians of the rights and privileges of the nation [RR].

Constitution  
and govern-  
ment of the  
German  
Empire.

THE kingdom of France extends to the confines of the German Empire, from which Charles V. derived his title of highest dignity. In explaining the political constitution of this vast and complex body at the beginning of the sixteenth century, I shall avoid entering into such a detail as would involve my readers in that inextricable labyrinth, which it formed by the multiplicity of its tribunals, the number of its members, their interfering rights, and by the endless discussions or refinements of the publick lawyers of Germany with respect to all these.

Its state un-  
der Charle-  
magne and  
his descen-  
dants.

THE Empire of Charlemagne was a structure erected in so short a time that it could not be permanent. Under his immediate successor it began to totter; and it soon fell to pieces. The crown of Germany was separated for ever from that of France, and the descendants of Charlemagne established two great monarchies so situated as to give rise to a perpetual rivalry and enmity between them. But the Princes of the race of Charlemagne who were placed on the Imperial throne, were not altogether so degenerate, as those of the same family who reigned in France. In the hands of the former the royal authority retained some vigour, and the nobles of Germany, though pos-

[RR] NOTE XL.

seffed



feffed of extensive privileges as well as ample territories, did not fo early attain independence. SECT. III.

The great offices of the crown continued to be at the difpofal of the fovereign, and during a long period, fiefs remained in their original ftate, without becoming hereditary and perpetual in the families to which they had been granted.

AT length the German branch of the family of Charlemagne became extinct, and his feeble de- Other families are raised to the Imperial dignity.  
fcendants who reigned in France had funk into fuch contempt, that the Germans, without looking towards them, exercifed the right inherent in a free people; and in a general affembly of the nation elected Conrad Count of Franconia Emperor. A.D. 931. After him Henry of Saxony, and his de- fcendants the three Othos, were placed, in fuc- ceflion, on the Imperial throne, by the fuffrages of their countrymen. The extenfive territories of the Saxon Emperors, their eminent abilities and enterprifing genius, not only added a new vigour to the Imperial dignity, but raifed it to higher power and pre-eminence. Otho the Great marched at A.D. 952. the head of a numerous army into Italy, and after the example of Charlemagne, gave law to that country. Every power there recognized his authority. He created Popes and depofed them by his fovereign mandate. He annexed the kingdom of Italy to the German Empire. Elated with his fuccefs, he affumed the title of Cæfar Auguftus<sup>n</sup>. A Prince born in the heart of Germany pretended

<sup>n</sup> Annalista Saxo, &c. ap. Struv. Corp. vol. i. p. 246.



SECT. III. to be the successor of the Emperors of ancient Rome, and claimed a right to the same power and prerogative.

The German nobility acquire independent and sovereign authority.

BUT while the emperors, by means of these new titles, and new dominions, gradually acquired additional authority and splendour, the nobility of Germany went on at the same time extending their privileges and jurisdiction. The situation of affairs was favourable to their attempts. The vigour which Charlemagne had given to government quickly relaxed. The inability of some of his successors was such, as would have encouraged vassals less enterprising than the nobles of that age, to have claimed new rights and to have assumed new powers. The civil wars in which other emperors were engaged, obliged them to pay perpetual court to their subjects on whose support they depended, and not only to connive at their usurpations, but to permit and even to authorize them. Fiefs gradually became hereditary. They were transmitted not only in the direct, but in the collateral line. The investiture of them was demanded not only by male but by female heirs. Every baron began to exercise sovereign jurisdiction within his own domains; and the Dukes and Counts of Germany took wide steps towards rendering their territories distinct and independent States<sup>1</sup>. The Saxon Emperors observed their progress, and were aware of its ten-

The German ecclesiastics raised to the same power.

<sup>1</sup> Peseffel. Abregè, p. 120. 152. Lib. Feudor. tit. i.

dency. But as they could not hope to humble vassals already grown too potent, unless they had turned their whole force as well as attention to that enterprize, and as they were extremely intent on their expeditions into Italy, which they could not undertake without the concurrence of their nobles, they were solicitous not to alarm them by any direct attack on their privileges and jurisdictions. They aimed, however, at undermining their power. With this view, they inconsiderately bestowed additional territories, and accumulated new honours on the clergy, in hopes that this order might serve as a counterpoise to that of the nobility in any future struggle<sup>k</sup>.

THE unhappy effects of this fatal error in policy were quickly felt. Under the Emperors of the Franconian and Swabian lines, whom the Germans by their voluntary election placed on the Imperial throne, a new face of things appeared, and a scene was exhibited in Germany, which astonished all Christendom at that time, and in the present age appears almost incredible. The Popes, hitherto dependent on the Emperors, and indebted for power as well as dignity to their beneficence and protection, began to claim a superior jurisdiction; and in virtue of authority which they pretended to derive from heaven, tried, condemned, excommunicated, and deposed their former masters. Nor is this to be considered

The fatal effects of aggrandizing the clergy.  
A. D. 1024.

<sup>k</sup> Pfeffel. Abregè, p. 154.

## SECT. III.

merely as a frantick folly of passion in a pontiff intoxicated with high ideas concerning the extent of priestly domination, and the plenitude of papal authority. Gregory VII. was able as well as daring. His presumption and violence were accompanied with political discernment and sagacity. He had observed that the Princes and nobles of Germany, had acquired such considerable territories and such extensive jurisdiction as rendered them not only formidable to the Emperors, but disposed them to favour any attempt to circumscribe their power. He foresaw that the ecclesiasticks of Germany, raised almost to a level with its Princes, were ready to support any person who would stand forth as the protector of their privileges and independence. With both of these Gregory negotiated, and had secured many devoted adherents among them, before he ventured to enter the lists against the head of the Empire.

The contests  
between the  
Popes and  
Emperors,  
and the con-  
sequences of  
these,

HE began his rupture with Henry IV. upon a pretext that was popular and plausible. He complained of the venality and corruption with which the Emperor had granted the investiture of benefices to ecclesiasticks. He contended that this right belonged to him as head of the church; he required Henry to confine himself within the bounds of his civil jurisdiction, and to abstain for the future from such sacrilegious encroachments on the spiritual dominion. All the censures of the church were denounced against Henry, because

he

he refused to relinquish those powers which his SECT. III.  
 predecessors had uniformly exercised. The most  
 considerable of the German Princes and eccle-  
 siasticks were excited to take arms against him.  
 His mother, his wife, his sons were wrought upon  
 to disregard all the ties of blood as well as of  
 duty, and to join the party of his enemies<sup>k</sup>. Such  
 were the successful arts with which the court of  
 Rome inflamed the superstitious zeal, and con-  
 ducted the factious spirit of the Germans and Ita-  
 lians, that an Emperor, distinguished not only for  
 many virtues, but possessed of considerable talents,  
 was at length obliged to appear as a supplicant  
 at the gate of the castle in which the Pope resided,  
 and to stand there, three days, bare-footed, in the  
 depth of winter, imploring a pardon, which at A. D. 1077-  
 length he obtained with difficulty [SS].

THIS act of humiliation degraded the Imperial  
 dignity. Nor was the depression only momentary.  
 The contest between Gregory and Henry gave  
 rise to the two great factions of the Guelfs and  
 Ghibellines; the former of which supporting the  
 pretensions of the Popes, and the latter defending  
 the rights of the Emperor, kept Germany and  
 Italy in perpetual agitation during three centuries.  
 A regular system for humbling the Emperors and  
 circumscribing their power was formed, and ad- The Impe-  
 rial autho-  
 rity gradu-  
 ally declines.  
 hered to uniformly throughout that period. The  
 Popes, the free States in Italy, the nobility and

<sup>k</sup> Annal. German. ap. Struv. i. p. 325.

[SS] NOTE XLI.

**SECT. III.** ecclesiasticks of Germany, were all interested in its success; and notwithstanding the return of some short intervals of vigour, under the administration of a few able Emperors, the Imperial

**A. D. 1256.** authority continued to decline. During the anarchy of the long interregnum subsequent to the death of William of Holland, it dwindled down

**A. D. 1273.** to nothing. Rodolph of Hapsburgh, the founder of the House of Austria, and who first opened the way to its future grandeur, was at length elected Emperor, not that he might re-establish and extend the Imperial authority, but because his territories and influence were so inconsiderable as to excite no jealousy in the German Princes, who were willing to preserve the forms of a constitution, the power and vigour of which they had destroyed. Several of his successors were placed on the Imperial throne from the same motive; and almost every remaining prerogative was wrested out of the hands of feeble Princes unable to exercise or to defend them.

A total change in the political constitution of the Empire.

**DURING** this period of turbulence and confusion the constitution of the Germanick body underwent a total change. The ancient names of courts and magistrates, together with the original forms and appearance of policy, were preserved; but such new privileges and jurisdiction were assumed, and so many various rights established, that the same species of government no longer subsisted. The Princes, the great nobility, the dignified ecclesiasticks, the free cities had taken advantage of the

the interregnum, which I have mentioned, to establish or to extend their usurpations. They claimed and exercised the right of governing their respective territories with full sovereignty. They acknowledged no superior with respect to any point, relative to the interior administration and police of their domains. They enacted laws, imposed taxes, coined money, declared war, concluded peace, and exerted every prerogative peculiar to independent States. The ideas of order and political union which had formed the various provinces of Germany into one body were entirely lost; and the society must have dissolved, if the forms of feudal subordination had not preserved such an appearance of connection or dependence among the various members of the community, as preserved it from falling to pieces.

THIS bond of union, however, was extremely feeble; and no principle remained in the German constitution of sufficient force to maintain publick order, and hardly to ascertain personal security. From the accession of Rodolph of Hapsburgh, to the reign of Maximilian, the immediate predecessor of Charles V. the Empire felt every calamity which a state must endure when the authority of government is so much relaxed as to have lost all vigour. The causes of dissension among that vast number of members which composed the Germanick body, were infinite and unavoidable. These gave rise to perpetual private wars, carried on with all the violence of resentment when un-

Expedients  
for putting  
an end to  
this state of  
anarchy.



SECT. III. restrained by superior authority. Rapine, outrage, exactions, became universal. Commerce was interrupted; industry suspended; and every part of Germany resembled a country which an enemy had plundered and laid desolate<sup>1</sup>. The variety of expedients employed with a view to restore order and tranquillity, prove that the grievances occasioned by this state of anarchy had grown intolerable. Arbiters were appointed to terminate the differences among the several states. The cities united in a league, the object of which was to check the rapine and extortions of the nobility. The nobility formed confederacies, on purpose to maintain tranquillity among their own order. Germany was divided into several Circles, in each of which a provincial and partial jurisdiction was established, to supply the place of a publick and common tribunal<sup>m</sup>.

Particularly  
by the insti-  
tution of the  
Imperial  
Chamber.

BUT all these remedies were so fruitless, that they served only to demonstrate the violence of that anarchy which prevailed, and the inefficacy of the means employed to correct it. At length Maximilian re-established publick order in the Empire, by instituting the Imperial chamber, a tribunal composed of judges named partly by the Emperor, partly by the several States, and vested with authority to decide finally concerning all differences among the members of the Germanick

<sup>1</sup> See above, page 53, and note xxi. Datt. de pace publica Imper. p. 25, no. 53. p. 28, no. 26. p. 35, no. 11.

<sup>m</sup> Datt. passim. Struv. Corp. Hist. i. 510, &c.



body. A few years after, by giving a new form SECT. III.  
 to the Aulick council, which takes cognizance of A. D. 1512.  
 all feudal causes, and such as belong to the Emperor's immediate jurisdiction, he restored some degree of vigour to the Imperial authority.

BUT notwithstanding the salutary effects of these regulations and improvements, the political constitution of the German Empire, at the commencement of the period of which I propose to write the history, was of a species so peculiar, as not to resemble perfectly any form of government known either in the ancient or modern world. It was a complex body, formed by the association of several States, each of which possessed sovereign and independent jurisdiction within its own territories. Of all the members which composed this united body, the Emperor was the head. In his name, all degrees and regulations with respect to points of common concern, were issued; and to him the power of carrying them into execution was committed. But this appearance of monarchical power in the Emperor was more than counterbalanced by the influence of the Princes and States of the Empire in every act of administration. No law extending to the whole body could pass, no resolution that affected the general interest could be taken, without the approbation of the Diet of the Empire. In this assembly, every sovereign Prince and State of the Germanick body had a right to be present, to deliberate, and to vote. The decrees

At the beginning of the sixteenth century, the Empire an association of sovereign states.

SECT. III or *Recesses* of the Diet were the laws of the Empire, which the Emperor was bound to ratify and enforce.

Peculiarities  
in the na-  
ture of this  
association.

UNDER this aspect the constitution of the Empire appears a regular confederacy, similar to the Achæan league in ancient Greece, or to that of the United Provinces and of the Swiss Cantons in modern times. But if viewed in another light, striking peculiarities in its political state present themselves. The Germanick body was not formed by the union of members altogether distinct and independent. All the Princes and States joined in this association, were originally subject to the Emperors, and acknowledged them as sovereigns. Besides this, they originally held their lands as Imperial fiefs, and in consequence of this tenure owed the Emperors all those services which feudal vassals are bound to perform to their liege lord. But though this political subjection was entirely at an end, and the influence of the feudal relation much diminished, the ancient forms and institutions introduced while the Emperors governed Germany with authority, not inferior to that which the other monarchs of Europe possessed, still remained. Thus an opposition was established between the genius of the government, and the forms of administration in the German Empire. The former considered the Emperor only as the head of a confederacy, the members of which, by their voluntary choice, have raised him to that dignity; the latter seemed to imply, that he is really

really invested with sovereign power. By this circumstance, such principles of hostility and discord were interwoven in the frame of the Germanick body, as affected each of its members, rendering their interior union incomplete, and their external efforts feeble and irregular. The effects of this vice or disorder inherent in the constitution of the Empire are so considerable, that, without attending to them, it is impossible to comprehend many transactions in the reign of Charles V. or to form just ideas concerning the genius of the German government.

SECT. III.  
The defects  
in the con-  
stitution of  
the Empire.

THE Emperors of Germany, at the beginning of the sixteenth century, were distinguished by the most pompous titles, and by such ensigns of dignity as intimated their authority to be superior to that of all other monarchs. The greatest Princes of the Empire attended, and served them on some occasions, as the officers of their household. They exercised prerogatives which no other sovereign ever claimed. They retained pretensions to all the extensive powers which their predecessors had enjoyed in any former age. But at the same time, instead of possessing that ample domain which had belonged to the ancient Emperors of Germany, and which stretched from Basil to Cologne, along both banks of the Rhine<sup>n</sup>, they were stript of all territorial property, and had not a single city, a single castle, a single foot of land, that pertained to them as heads of the Empire. As their domain

Arising  
from the li-  
mited power  
of the Em-  
perors.

<sup>n</sup> Pfeffel. Abregè, &c. p. 241.

SECT. III. was alienated, their stated revenues were reduced almost to nothing; and the extraordinary aids, which on a few occasions they obtained, were granted sparingly, and paid with reluctance. The Princes and States of the Empire, though they seemed to recognize the Imperial authority, were subjects only in name, each of them possessing a complete municipal jurisdiction within the precincts of his own territories.

From the  
nature of  
their titles  
and preten-  
sions,

FROM this ill-compacted frame of government, effects that were unavoidable resulted. The Emperors, dazzled with the splendor of their titles, and the exterior signs of vast authority, were apt to imagine themselves to be the real sovereigns of Germany, and were led to aim continually at recovering the exercise of those powers which the forms of the constitution seemed to vest in them, and which their predecessors, Charlemagne and the Othos, had actually enjoyed. The Princes and States, aware of the nature as well as extent of their pretensions, were perpetually on their guard, in order to watch all the motions of the Imperial court, and to circumscribe its power within limits still more narrow. The Emperors, in support of their claims, appealed to ancient forms and institutions, which the States held to be obsolete. The States founded their rights on recent practice and modern privileges, which the Emperors considered as usurpations.

THIS jealousy of the Imperial authority, together with the opposition between it and the rights of the States, increased considerably from the time that the Emperors were elected, not by the collective body of German nobles, but by a few Princes of chief dignity. During a long period, all the members of the Germanick body assembled, and made choice of the person whom they appointed to be their head. But amidst the violence and anarchy which prevailed for several centuries in the Empire, seven Princes who possessed the most extensive territories, and who had obtained a hereditary title to the great offices of the State, acquired the exclusive privilege of nominating the Emperor. This right was confirmed to them by the Golden Bull; the mode of exercising it was ascertained, and they were dignified with the appellation of *Electors*. The nobility and free cities being thus stripped of a privilege which they had once enjoyed, were less connected with a Prince, towards whose elevation they had not contributed by their suffrages, and came to be more apprehensive of his authority. The Electors, by their extensive power, and the distinguishing privileges which they possessed, became formidable to the Emperors, with whom they were placed almost on a level in several acts of jurisdiction. Thus the introduction of the Electoral college into the Empire, and the authority which it acquired, instead of diminishing, contributed to strengthen the principles of hostility and discord in the Germanick constitution.

SECT. III.

From the manner in which they were elected.

## SECT. III.

From the different forms of government established in the States which composed the Germanick body.

THESE were further augmented by the various and repugnant forms of civil policy in the several States which composed the Germanick body. It is no easy matter to render the union of independent States perfect and entire, even when the genius and forms of their respective governments happen to be altogether similar. But in the German Empire, which was a confederacy of Princes, of Ecclesiasticks, and of free-cities, it was impossible that they could incorporate thoroughly. The free-cities were small republicks, in which the maxims and spirit peculiar to that species of government prevailed. The Princes and nobles, to whom supreme jurisdiction belonged, possessed a sort of monarchical power within their own territories, and the forms of their interior administration nearly resembled those of the great feudal kingdoms. The interests, the ideas, the objects of States so differently constituted, cannot be the same. Nor could their common deliberations be carried on with the same spirit, while the love of liberty and attention to commerce were the reigning principles in the cities; while the desire of power, and ardour for military glory, were the governing passions of the Princes and nobility.

From the opposition between the secular and ecclesiastical members.

THE secular and ecclesiastical members of the Empire were as little fitted for union as the free-cities and the nobility. Vast territories had been granted to several of the German bishopricks and abbeys, and some of the highest offices in the Empire having been annexed to them inalienably, were held



held by the ecclesiasticks raised to these dignities. SECT. III.  
 The younger sons of noblemen of the second order, who had devoted themselves to the church, were commonly promoted to these stations of eminence and power; and it was no small mortification to the Princes and great nobility, to see persons raised from an inferior rank to the same level with themselves, or even exalted to superior dignity. The education of these churchmen, the genius of their profession, and their connection with the court of Rome, rendered their character as well as interest different from those of the other members of the Germanick body, with whom they were called to act in concert. Thus another source of jealousy and variance was opened, which ought not to be overlooked when we are searching into the nature of the German constitution.

To all these causes of dissension may be added one more, arising from the unequal distribution of power and wealth among the States of the Empire. The Electors, and other nobles of the highest rank, not only possessed sovereign jurisdiction, but governed such extensive, populous, and rich countries, as rendered them great Princes. Many of the other members, though they enjoyed all the rights of sovereignty, ruled over such petty domains, that their real power bore no proportion to this high prerogative. A well-compacted and vigorous confederacy could not be formed of such dissimilar states. The weaker were jealous, timid, and unable either to assert or to defend their just privileges.



SECT. III. privileges. The more powerful were apt to assume and to become oppressive. The Electors and Emperors by turns endeavoured to extend their own authority, by encroaching on the rights of those feeble members of the Germanick body; and they, over-awed or corrupted, tamely surrendered their privileges, or meanly favoured the designs formed against them [TT].

All these render the Germanick body incapable of acting with union and vigour.

AFTER contemplating all these principles of disunion and opposition in the constitution of the German Empire, it will be easy to account for the want of concord and uniformity, conspicuous in its councils and proceedings. That slow, dilatory, distrustful, and irresolute spirit, which characterizes all its deliberations, will appear natural in a body, the junction of whose members was so incomplete, the different parts of which were held together by such feeble ties, and set at variance by such powerful motives. But the Empire of Germany, nevertheless, comprehended countries of such vast extent, and was inhabited by such a martial and hardy race of men, that when the abilities of an Emperor, or zeal for any common cause could rouse this unwieldy body to put forth its strength, it acted with irresistible force. In the following history we shall find, that as the measures on which Charles V. was most intent, were often thwarted or rendered abortive by the spirit of jealousy and division peculiar to the Germanick constitu-

[TT] NOTE XLII,

tion ;

tion; so it was by the influence which he acquired SECT. III.  
 over the Princes of the Empire, and by engaging  
 them to co-operate with him, that he was enabled  
 to make some of the greatest efforts which distin-  
 guish his reign.

THE Turkish history is so blended, during the View of the  
Turkish go-  
vernment.  
 reign of Charles V. with that of the great nations  
 in Europe, and the Ottoman Porte interposed so  
 often, and with such decisive influence in the wars  
 and negociations of the Christian Princes, that some  
 previous account of the state of government in  
 that great Empire, is no less necessary for the in-  
 formation of my readers, than these views of the  
 constitution of other kingdoms which I have al-  
 ready exhibited to them.

IT has been the fate of the southern and more Its origin  
 fertile parts of Asia, at different periods, to be con-  
 quered by that warlike and hardy race of men, who  
 inhabit the vast country known to the ancients by  
 the name of Scythia, and among the moderns by  
 that of Tartary. One tribe of these people, called  
 Turks or Turcomans, extended its conquests, un-  
 der various leaders, and during several centuries,  
 from the shore of the Caspian to the Streights of the  
 Dardanelles. Towards the middle of the fifteenth  
 century, these formidable conquerors took Constan-  
 tinople by storm, and established the seat of their  
 government in that Imperial city. Greece, Mol-  
 davia, Walachia, and the other provinces of the  
 ancient kingdoms of Thrace and Macedonia, to-  
 gether

SECT. III. gether with part of Hungary, were subjected to their power.

Its despotic  
genius.

BUT though the seat of the Turkish government was fixed in Europe, and the Sultans obtained possession of such extensive dominions in that quarter of the globe, the genius of their policy was purely Asiatick; and may be properly termed a despotism, in contradistinction to those monarchical and republican forms of government which we have been hitherto contemplating. The supreme power was vested in Sultans of the Ottoman race, that blood being deemed so sacred, that no other was thought worthy of the throne. From this elevation, these sovereigns could look down and behold all their subjects reduced to the same level before them. The maxims of Turkish policy admit not any of those institutions, which, in other countries, limit the exercise, or moderate the rigour of monarchical power: no great court with constitutional and permanent jurisdiction to interpose, both in enacting laws, and in executing them: no body of hereditary nobles, whose sense of their own pre-eminence, whose consciousness of what is due to their rank and character, whose jealousy of their privileges circumscribe the authority of the Prince, and serve not only as a barrier against the excesses of his caprice, but stand as an intermediate order between him and the people. Under the Turkish government, the political condition of every subject is equal. To be employed in the service of the Sultan, is the only circumstance that confers distinction,

tion. Even this distinction is annexed so closely SECT. III.  
 to the stations in which persons serve, that it is  
 scarcely communicated to those who are placed in  
 them. The highest dignity in the Empire does  
 not give any rank or pre-eminence to the family  
 of him who enjoys it. As every man, before he  
 is raised to any station of authority, must go through  
 the preparatory discipline of a long and servile obe-  
 dience<sup>o</sup>, the moment he is deprived of power, he  
 and his posterity return to the same condition with  
 other subjects, and sink back into obscurity. It is  
 the distinguishing and odious characteristick of  
 Eastern despotism, that it annihilates all other ranks  
 of men, in order to exalt the monarch; that it  
 leaves nothing to the former, while it gives every  
 thing to the latter; that it endeavours to fix  
 in the minds of those who are subject to it, the  
 idea of no relation between men, but that of a  
 master and of a slave, the former destined to com-  
 mand and to punish, the latter formed to tremble  
 and to obey [UU].

But as there are circumstances which frequently  
 obstruct or defeat the salutary effects of the best-  
 regulated governments, there are others which con-  
 tribute to mitigate the evils of the most vicious  
 forms of policy. There can, indeed, be no con-  
 stitutional restraints upon the will of a Prince in a  
 despotic government; but there may be such as

Power of  
 the Sultan  
 limited by  
 religion;

<sup>o</sup> State of the Turkish Empire by Rycant, p. 25.

[UU] NOTE XLIII.

SECT. III. are accidental. Absolute as the Turkish Sultans are, they feel themselves circumscribed both by religion, the principle on which their authority is founded<sup>p</sup>, and by the army, the instrument which they must employ in order to maintain it. Wherever religion interposes, the will of the sovereign must submit to its decrees. When the Koran hath prescribed any religious rite; hath enjoined any moral duty; or hath confirmed, by its sanction, any political maxim, the command of the Sultan cannot overturn that which an higher authority hath established. The chief restriction, however, on the will of the Sultans, is imposed by the military power. An armed force must surround the throne of every Despot, to maintain his authority, and to execute his commands. As the Turks extended their empire over nations, which they did not exterminate, but reduce to subjection, they found it necessary to render their military establishment numerous and formidable. Amurath, their third Sultan, in order to form a body of devoted troops, that might serve as the immediate guards of his person and dignity, appointed his officers to seize annually, as the Imperial property, the fifth part of the youth taken in war. These, after being instructed in the Mahometan religion, inured to obedience by severe discipline, and trained to warlike exercises, were formed into a body distinguished by the name of *Janizaries*, or new foldiers. Every sentiment which enthusiasm can inspire, every mark of distinction that the favour of the Prince

and by the  
military.

Origin of  
the Jani-  
zaries.

A. D. 1362.

could confer, were employed in order to animate SECT. III.  
 this body with martial ardour, and with a consciousness of its own pre-eminence<sup>a</sup>. The Janizaries soon became the chief strength and pride of the Ottoman armies; and by their number as well as reputation, were distinguished above all the troops, whose duty it was to attend on the person of the Sultans [XX].

THUS, as the supreme power in every society is possessed by those who have arms in their hands, this formidable body of soldiers, destined to be the instruments of enlarging the Sultan's authority, acquired, at the same time, the means of controuling it. The Janizaries in Constantinople, like the Prætorian bands in ancient Rome, quickly perceived all the advantages which they derived from being stationed in the capital; from their union under one standard; and from being masters of the person of the prince. The Sultans became no less sensible of their influence and importance. The *Capiculy*, or soldiery of the Port, was the only power in the Empire that a Sultan or his Visier had reason to dread. To preserve the fidelity and attachment of the Janizaries, was the great art of government, and the principal object of attention in the policy of the Ottoman court. Under a monarch, whose abilities and vigour of mind fit him for command, they are obsequious instruments; execute whatever he enjoins; and render his power

Their vast influence in the Turkish government.

<sup>a</sup> Prince Cantemir's History of the Ottoman Empire, p. 87.

[XX] NOTE XLIV.

**SECT. III.** irresistible. Under feeble Princes, or such as are unfortunate, they become turbulent and mutinous; assume the tone of masters; degrade and exalt Sultans at pleasure; and teach those to tremble, on whose nod, at other times, life or death depend.

Progress of  
the Turks  
towards do-  
minion.

FROM Mahomet II. who took Constantinople, to Solyman, who began his reign a few months after Charles V. was placed on the Imperial throne of Germany, a succession of illustrious Princes ruled over the Turkish Empire. By their great abilities, they kept their subjects of every order, military as well as civil, submissive to government; and had the absolute command of whatever force their vast Empire was able to exert. Solyman, in particular, who is known to the Christians chiefly as a conqueror, but is celebrated in the Turkish annals as the great law-giver who established order and police in their Empire, governed during his long reign with no less authority than wisdom. He divided his dominions into several districts; he appointed the number of soldiers which each should furnish; he appropriated a certain proportion of the lands in every province for their maintenance; he regulated, with a minute accuracy, every thing relative to their discipline, their arms, and the nature of their service. He put the finances of the Empire into an orderly train of administration; and though the taxes in the Turkish dominions, as well as in the other despotic monarchies of the East, are far from being considerable, he supplied that defect by an attentive and severe œconomy.

NOR



NOR was it only under such Sultans as Solyman, SECT. III.  
 whose talents were no less adapted to preserve interior order than to conduct the operations of war, that the Turkish Empire engaged with advantage in its contests with the Christian states. The long succession of able Princes, which I have mentioned, had given such vigour and firmness to the Ottoman government, that it seems to have attained, during the sixteenth century, the highest degree of perfection of which its constitution was capable. Whereas the great monarchies in Christendom were still far from that state, which could enable them to act with a full exertion of their force. Besides this, the Turkish troops in that age possessed every advantage which arises from superiority in military discipline. At the time when Solyman began his reign, the Janizaries had been embodied near a century and a half, and during that long period, the severity of their military discipline had in no degree relaxed. The soldiers drawn from the provinces of the Empire, had been kept almost continually under arms, in the various wars which the Sultans had carried on with hardly any interval of peace. Against troops thus trained and accustomed to service, the forces of the Christian powers took the field with great disadvantage. The most intelligent as well as impartial authors of the sixteenth century, acknowledge and lament the superior attainments of the Turks in the military art [YY]. The success which uniformly attended their arms in all their

Advantages  
 which they  
 possessed  
 over the  
 Christian  
 powers in  
 the six-  
 teenth cen-  
 tury.

[YY] NOTE XLV.

Q 3

Wars,

SECT. III. wars, demonstrates the justness of this observation.

The Christian armies did not acquire that superiority over the Turks, which they now possess, until the long establishment of standing forces had improved military discipline among the former; and until various causes and events, which it is not my province to explain, had corrupted or abolished their ancient warlike institutions among the latter.

PROOFS

P R O O F S  
A N D  
I L L U S T R A T I O N S .



# P R O O F S AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

NOTE I. SECT. I. p. 3. [A]

THE consternation of the Britons, when invaded by the Picts and Caledonians after the Roman legions were called out of the island, may give some idea of the degree of debasement to which the human mind was reduced by long servitude under the Romans. In their supplicatory letter to Aetius, which they call the *groans of Britain*, “ We know not (say they) which way to turn us. The barbarians drive us to the sea; and the sea forces us back on the barbarians; between which we have only the choice of two deaths, either to be swallowed up by the waves, or to be butchered by the sword.” *Hist. Gildæ. ap. Gale. Hist. Britan. Script. p. 6.*— One can hardly believe this dastardly race to be the descendants of that gallant people, who repulsed Cæsar, and defended their liberty so long against the Roman arms,

NOTE

## NOTE II. SECT. I. p. 4. [B].

THE barbarous nations were not only illiterate, but regarded literature with contempt. They found the inhabitants of all the provinces of the Empire sunk in effeminacy, and averse to war. Such a character was the object of scorn to an high-spirited and gallant race of men. "When we would brand an enemy," says Liutprandus, "with the most disgraceful and contumelious appellation, we call him a Roman; hoc solo, id est *Romani* nomine, quicquid ignobilitatis, quicquid timiditatis, quicquid avaritiæ, quicquid luxuriæ, quicquid mendacii, immo quicquid vitiorum est comprehendentes." Liutprandi Legatio apud Murat. Scriptor. Italic. vol. ii. pars 1. p. 481. This degeneracy of manners, illiterate barbarians imputed to their love of learning. Even after they settled in the countries which they had conquered, they would not permit their children to be instructed in any science; "for (said they) instruction in the sciences tends to corrupt, enervate, and depress the mind; and he who has been accustomed to tremble under the rod of a pedagogue, will never look on a sword or spear with an undaunted eye." Procop. de bello Gothor. lib. i. p. 4. ap. Scrip. Byz. edit. Venet. vol. i. A considerable number of years elapsed, before nations so rude, and so unwilling to learn, could produce historians capable of recording their transactions, or of describing their manners and institutions. By that time, all memory of their ancient condition

dition was lost, and no monument remained to guide their first writers to any certain knowledge of it. If one expects to receive any satisfactory account of the manners and laws of the Goths, Lombards, or Franks, during their residence in those countries where they were originally seated, from Jornandes, Paulus Warnefridus, or Gregory of Tours, the earliest and most authentick historians of these people, he will be miserably disappointed. Whatever imperfect knowledge has been conveyed to us of their ancient state, we owe not to their own writers, but to the Greek and Roman historians.

## NOTE III. SECT. I. p. 6. [C].

A CIRCUMSTANCE related by Priscus in his history of the embassy to Attila, King of the Huns, gives a striking view of the enthusiastick passion for war, which prevailed among the barbarous nations. When the entertainment to which that fierce conqueror admitted the Roman ambassadors was ended, two Scythians advanced towards Attila, and recited a poem in which they celebrated his victories, and military virtues. All the Huns fixed their eyes with attention on the bards. Some seemed to be delighted with the verses; others, remembering their own battles and exploits, exulted with joy; while such as were become feeble through age, burst out into tears, bewailing the decay of their vigour, and the state of inactivity in which they were now obliged to remain.



remain. *Excerpta ex historia Prisci Rhetoris ap. Byzant. Histor. Script. vol. i. p. 45.*

NOTE IV. SECT. I. p. 12. [D].

A REMARKABLE confirmation of both parts of this reasoning occurs in the history of England. The Saxons carried on the conquest of that country with the same destructive spirit, which distinguished the other barbarous nations. The ancient inhabitants of Britain were either exterminated; or forced to take shelter among the mountains of Wales; or reduced into servitude. The Saxon government, laws, manners, and language were of consequence introduced into Britain; and were so perfectly established, that all memory of the institutions previous to their conquest was abolished. The very reverse of this happened in a subsequent revolution. A single victory placed William the Norman on the throne of England. The Saxon inhabitants, though oppressed, were not exterminated. William employed the utmost efforts of his power and policy to make his new subjects conform in every thing to the Norman standard; but without success. The Saxons, though vanquished, were far more numerous than their conquerors; when the two races began to incorporate, the Saxon laws and manners gradually gained ground. The Norman institutions were unpopular and odious; many of them fell into disuse; and in the English constitution and language, at this day, many essential parts are manifestly of Saxon, not of Norman extract.

NOTE

## NOTE V. SECT. I. p. 13. [E].

PROCOPIUS, the historian, declines, from a principle of benevolence, to give any particular detail of the cruelties of the Goths; "Lest, says he, I should transmit a monument and example of inhumanity to succeeding ages." *Proc. de bello Goth. lib. iii. cap. 10. ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 126.* But as the change, which I have pointed out as a consequence of the settlement of the barbarous nations in the countries formerly subject to the Roman Empire, could not have taken place, if the greater part of the ancient inhabitants had not been extirpated, an event of such importance and influence merits a more particular illustration. This will justify me for exhibiting some part of that melancholy spectacle, over which humanity prompted Procopius to draw a veil. I shall not, however, disgust my readers by a long detail; but rest satisfied with collecting some instances of the devastations made by two of the many nations, which settled in the Empire. The Vandals were the first of the barbarians who invaded Spain. It was one of the richest and most populous of the Roman provinces; the inhabitants had been distinguished for courage, and had defended their liberty against the arms of Rome, with greater obstinacy, and during a longer course of years, than any nation in Europe. But so entirely were they enervated by their subjection to the Romans, that the Vandals, who entered the kingdom A. D. 409. completed the conquest of it with such rapidity, that

that in the year 411, these barbarians divided it among them by casting lots. The desolation occasioned by their invasion is thus described by Idatius an eye-witness. "The barbarians wasted every thing with hostile cruelty. The pestilence was no less destructive. A dreadful famine raged, to such a degree, that the living were constrained to feed on the dead bodies of their fellow-citizens; and all those terrible plagues desolated at once the unhappy kingdoms." *Idatii Chron. ap. Biblioth. Patrum. vol. vii. p. 1233. edit. Lugd. 1677.* The Goths having attacked the Vandals in their new settlements, a fierce war ensued; the country was plundered by both parties; the cities which escaped at first, were laid in ashes, and the inhabitants exposed to suffer every thing that the wanton cruelty of barbarians could inflict. Idatius describes these, *ibid. p. 1235. b. 1236. c. f.* A similar account of their devastations is given by Isidorus Hispalensis, and the contemporary writers. *Isid. Chron. ap. Grot. hist. Goth. 732.* From Spain the Vandals passed over to Africa, A. D. 428. Africa was, next to Egypt, the most fertile of the Roman provinces. It was one of the granaries of the Empire, and is called by an ancient writer, the soul of the commonwealth. Though the army with which the Vandals invaded it, did not exceed 30,000 fighting men, they became absolute masters of the province in less than two years. A contemporary author gives a dreadful account of the havock which they made: "They found a province well cultivated, and enjoying plenty, the  
beauty

beauty of the whole earth. They carried their destructive arms into every corner of it; they dispeopled it by their devastations; exterminating every thing with fire and sword. They did not even spare the vines, and fruit trees, that those, to whom caves and inaccessible mountains had afforded a retreat, might find no nourishment of any kind. Their hostile rage could not be satiated, and there was no place exempted from the effects of it. They tortured their prisoners with the most exquisite cruelty, that they might force from them a discovery of their hidden treasures. The more they discovered, the more they expected, and the more implacable they became. Neither the infirmities of age nor of sex; neither the dignity of nobility, nor the sanctity of the sacerdotal office, could mitigate their fury; but the more illustrious their prisoners were, the more barbarously they insulted them. The publick buildings which resisted the violence of the flames, they levelled with the ground. They left many cities without an inhabitant. When they approached any fortified place, which their undisciplined army could not reduce, they gathered together a multitude of prisoners, and putting them to the sword, left their bodies unburied, that the stench of the carcases might oblige the garrison to abandon it." *Victor Vitenfis de persecutione Africana ap. Bibl. Patrum. vol. viii. p. 666.* St. Augustin, an African, and a contemporary author, gives a similar description of their cruelties, *Opera vol. x. p. 372. edit. 1616.*—About an hundred years

years after the settlement of the Vandals in Africa, Belisarius attacked and dispossessed them. Procopius, a contemporary historian, describes the devastation which that war occasioned. "Africa, says he, was so entirely dispeopled, that one might travel several days in it without meeting one man; and it is no exaggeration to say, that in the course of the war five millions of persons perished." Proc. hist. Arcana, cap. 18. ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 315.—I have dwelt longer upon the calamities of this province, because they are described not only by contemporary authors, but by eye-witnesses. The present state of Africa confirms their testimony. Many of the most flourishing and populous cities with which it was filled, were so entirely ruined, that no vestiges remain to point out where they were situated. That fertile territory which sustained the Roman Empire lies in a great measure uncultivated; and that province, which Victor in his barbarous Latin called *Speciositas totius terræ florentis*, is now the retreat of pirates and banditti.

WHILE the Vandals laid waste one part of the Empire, the Huns desolated the rest of it. Of all the barbarous tribes they were the fiercest and most formidable. Ammianus Marcellinus, a contemporary author, and one of the best of the later historians, gives an account of their policy and manners. They nearly resemble those of the Scythians described by the ancients, and of the Tartars

known to the moderns. In some parts of their character, and in several of their customs, they resemble the savages in North America. Their passion for war and action was extreme. "As in polished societies (says Ammianus) ease and tranquillity are courted, they delight in war and dangers. He who falls in battle is reckoned happy. They who die of old age or of disease are deemed infamous. They boast, with the utmost exultation, of the number of enemies whom they have slain, and as the most glorious of all ornaments, they fasten the scalps of those who have fallen by their hand to the trappings of their horses." Ammian. Marc. lib. xxxi. p. 477. edit. Gronov. Lugd. 1693.—Their incursions into the Empire began in the fourth century; and the Romans, though no strangers, by that time, to the effects of barbarous rage, were astonished at the cruelty of their devastations. Thrace, Pannonia, and Illyricum, were the countries which they first laid desolate. As they had no thoughts of settling in Europe, their inroads were frequent, and Procopius computes that in each of these, at a medium, two hundred thousand persons perished, or were carried off as slaves. Procop. hist. Arcan. ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 316. Thrace, the best cultivated province in that quarter of the Empire, was converted into a desert, and when Priscus accompanied the ambassadors sent to Attila, there were no inhabitants in some of the cities, but a few miserable people who had taken shelter among the ruins of the churches; and the fields were covered

with the bones of those who had fallen by the sword. Priscus ap. Byz. Script. vol. i. 34. Attila became King of the Huns, A. D. 434. He is one of the greatest and most enterprising conquerors mentioned in history. He extended his Empire over all the vast countries, comprehended under the general names of Scythia and Germany in the ancient division of the world. While he was carrying on his wars against the barbarous nations, he kept the Roman Empire under perpetual apprehensions, and extorted vast subsidies from the timid and effeminate monarchs who governed it. In the year 451, he entered Gaul, at the head of an army composed of all the various nations which he had subdued. It was more numerous than any with which the barbarians had hitherto invaded the Empire. The devastations which he committed were horrible; not only the open country, but the most flourishing cities were desolated. The extent and cruelty of his devastations are described by Salvianus de Gubernat. Dei, edit. Baluz. Par. 1669. p. 139, &c. and by Idatius ubi supra, p. 1235. Aetius put a stop to his progress in that country by the famous battle of Chalons, in which (if we may believe the historians of that age) three hundred thousand persons perished. Idat. ibid. Jornandes de rebus Geticis ap. Grot. Hist. Gothor. p. 671. Amst. 1665. But next year he resolved to attack the center of the Empire, and marching into Italy, wasted it with rage, inflamed by the sense of his late disgrace. What Italy suffered by the Huns exceeded all the  
cala-



calamities which the preceding incursions of the barbarians had brought upon it. Conringius has collected several passages from the ancient historians, which prove that the devastations committed by the Vandals and Huns in the countries situated on the banks of the Rhine, were no less cruel and fatal to the human race. *Exercitatio de urbibus Germaniæ, Opera, vol. i. 488.* But it is endless, it is shocking to follow these destroyers of mankind through so many scenes of horror, and to contemplate the havock which they made of the human species.

BUT the state in which Italy appears to have been, during several ages, after the barbarous nations settled in it, is the most decisive proof of the cruelty as well as extent of their devastations. Whenever any country is thinly inhabited, trees and shrubs spring up in the uncultivated fields, and spreading by degrees form large forests; by the overflowing of rivers, and the stagnating of waters, other parts of it are converted into lakes and marshes. Ancient Italy, the seat of the Roman elegance and luxury, was cultivated to the highest pitch. But so effectually did the devastations of the barbarians destroy all the effects of their industry and cultivation, that in the eighth century Italy appears to have been covered with forests and marshes of vast extent. Muratori enters into a long detail concerning the situation and limits of these; and proves by the most authentick evidence, that great tracts of territory, in all the different provinces of Italy, were either

over-run with wood, or laid under water. Nor did these occupy parts of the country naturally barren or of little value, but were spread over districts, which ancient writers represent as extremely fertile, and which at present are highly cultivated. Muratori *Antiquitates Italicae medii ævi*, dissert. xxi. v. ii. p. 149. 153, &c. A strong proof of this occurs in a description of the city of Modena, by an author of the tenth century. Murat. *Script. Rerum Italic.* vol. ii. pars ii. p. 691. The state of desolation in other countries of Europe seems to have been the same. In many of the most early charters now extant, the lands granted to monasteries or to private persons, are distinguished into such as are cultivated or inhabited, and such as were *eremi*, desolate. In many instances, lands are granted to persons because they had taken them from the desert, *ab eremo*, and had cultivated and planted them with inhabitants. This appears from a charter of Charlemagne, published by Eckhart de rebus *Franciæ Orientalis*, vol. ii. p. 864, and from many charters of his successors quoted by Du Cange *voc. Eremus*.—Wherever a right of property in land can be thus acquired, it is evident that the country must be extremely desolate, and thinly peopled. The first settlers in America obtained possession of land by such a title. Whoever was able to clear and to cultivate a field, was recognized as the proprietor. His industry merited such a recompence. The grants in the charters which I have mentioned flow from a similar principle, and there must have been some resemblance in the state of the countries.

MURATORI adds, that during the eighth and ninth centuries, Italy was greatly infested by wolves and other wild beasts; another mark of its being destitute of inhabitants. Murat. Antiq. vol. ii. p. 163. Thus Italy, the pride of the ancient world for its fertility and cultivation, was reduced to the state of a country newly peopled, and rendered habitable.

I AM sensible, not only that some of these descriptions of the devastations which I have quoted, may be exaggerated, but that the barbarous tribes, in making their settlements, did not proceed invariably in the same manner. Some of them seemed to be bent on exterminating the ancient inhabitants; others were more disposed to incorporate with them. It is not my province either to enquire into the causes which occasioned this variety in the conduct of the conquerors, or to describe the state of those countries where the ancient inhabitants were treated most mildly. The facts which I have produced are sufficient to prove that the destruction of the human species, occasioned by the hostile invasions of the northern nations, and their subsequent settlements, was much greater than many authors seem to imagine.

NOTE VI. SECT. I. p. 14. [F].

I HAVE observed, Note II. that our only certain information concerning the ancient state of the barbarous nations must be derived from the Greek and Roman writers. Happily an account of the institutions and customs of one people, to which

those of all the rest seem to have been in a great measure similar, has been transmitted to us by two authors, the most capable, perhaps, that ever wrote, of observing them with profound discernment, and of describing them with propriety and force. The reader must perceive that I have Cæsar and Tacitus in my eye. The former gives a short account of the ancient Germans in a few chapters of the sixth book of his commentaries: The latter wrote a treatise expressly on that subject. These are the most precious and instructive monuments of antiquity to the present inhabitants of Europe. From them we learn,

1. THAT the state of Society among the ancient Germans was of the rudest and most simple form. They subsisted entirely by hunting or by pasturage. Cæs. lib. vi. c. 21. They neglected agriculture, and lived chiefly on milk, cheese, and flesh. Ibid. c. 22. Tacitus agrees with him in most of these points; De morib. Germ. c. 14, 15, 23. The Goths were equally negligent of agriculture. Prisc. Rhet. ap. Byz. Script. v. i. p. 31. B. Society was in the same state among the Huns, who disdained to cultivate the earth, or to touch a plough. Amm. Marcel. lib. xxxi. p. 475. The same manners took place among the Alans; ibid. p. 477. While society remains in this simple state, men by uniting together scarcely relinquish any portion of their natural independence. Accordingly we are informed, 2. That the authority of civil government was extremely limited among the

the Germans. During times of peace they had no common or fixed magistrate, but the chief men of every district dispensed justice, and accommodated differences. Cæf. *ibid.* c. 23. Their Kings had not absolute or unbounded power; their authority consisted rather in the privilege of advising, than in the power of commanding. Matters of small consequence were determined by the chief men; affairs of importance by the whole community. Tacit. c. 7. 11. The Huns, in like manner, deliberated in common concerning every business of moment to the society; and were not subject to the rigour of regal authority. Amm. Marcel. lib. xxxi. p. 474. 3. Every individual among the ancient Germans was left at liberty to chuse whether he would take part in any military enterprize which was proposed; there seems to have been no obligation to engage in it imposed on him by publick authority. "When any of the chief men proposes any expedition, such as approve of the cause and of the leader rise up, and declare their intention of following him; those who do not fulfil this engagement, are considered as deserters and traitors, and are looked upon as infamous." Cæf. *ibid.* c. 23. Tacitus plainly points at the same custom, though in terms more obscure. Tacit. c. 11. 4. As every individual was so independent, and master in so great a degree of his own actions, it became, of consequence, the great object of every person among the Germans who aimed at being a leader, to gain adherents, and attach them to his person and interest.

These adherents Cæsar calls *Ambacti* and *Clientes*, i. e. retainers or clients; Tacitus, *Comites*, or companions. The chief distinction and power of the leaders, consisted in being attended by a numerous band of chosen youth. This was their pride as well as ornament during peace, and their defence in war. The leaders gained or preserved the favour of these retainers by presents of armour, and of horses; or by the profuse, though inelegant hospitality, with which they entertained them. Tacit. c. 14, 15. 5. Another consequence of the personal liberty and independence which the Germans retained, even after they united in society, was their circumscribing the criminal jurisdiction of the magistrate within very narrow limits, and their not only claiming but exercising almost all the rights of private resentment and revenge. Their magistrates had not the power either of imprisoning, or of inflicting any corporal punishment on a free man. Tacit. c. 7. Every person was obliged to avenge the wrongs which his parents or friends had sustained. Their enmities were hereditary, but not irreconcilable. Even murder was compensated by paying a certain number of cattle. Tac. c. 21. A part of the fine went to the King, or state, a part to the person who had been injured, or to his kindred. Ibid. c. 12.

THOSE particulars concerning the institutions and manners of the Germans, though well known to every person conversant in ancient literature, I have thought proper to arrange in this order, and



to lay before such of my readers as may be less acquainted with these facts, both because they confirm the account which I have given of the state of the barbarous nations, and because they tend to illustrate all the observations I shall have occasion to make concerning the various changes in their government and customs. The laws and customs introduced by the barbarous nations into their new settlements, are the best commentary on the writings of Cæsar and Tacitus; and their observations are the best key to a perfect knowledge of these laws and customs.

ONE circumstance with respect to the testimonies of Cæsar and Tacitus concerning the Germans, merits attention. Cæsar wrote his brief account of their manners more than an hundred years before Tacitus composed his treatise *De moribus Germanorum*. An hundred years make a considerable period in the progress of national manners, especially if, during that time, those people who are rude and unpolished have had much communication with more civilized states. This was the case with the Germans. Their intercourse with the Romans began when Cæsar crossed the Rhine, and increased prodigiously during the interval between that event and the time when Tacitus flourished. Besides this, there was a considerable difference between the state of society among the different tribes of Germans. The Suiones were so much improved, that they began to be corrupted. Tac. cap. 44. The Fenni were so barbarous, that it is wonderful



wonderful how they were able to subsist. Ibid. cap. 46. Whoever undertakes to describe the manners of the Germans, or to found any political theory upon the state of society among them, ought carefully to attend to both these circumstances.

BEFORE I quit this subject, it may not be improper to observe, that though successive alterations in their institutions, together with the gradual progress of refinement, have made an entire change in the manners of the various people who conquered the Roman Empire, there is still one race of men nearly in the same political situation with theirs when they first settled in their new conquests: I mean the various tribes and nations of Savages in North America. It cannot then be considered either as a digression, or as an improper indulgence of curiosity, to enquire whether this similarity in their political state has occasioned any resemblance between their character and manners. If the likeness turns out to be striking, it is a stronger proof that a just account has been given of the ancient inhabitants of Europe, than the testimony even of Cæsar or of Tacitus.

I. THE Americans subsist chiefly by hunting and fishing. Some tribes neglect agriculture entirely. Among those who cultivate some small spot near their huts, that, together with all works of labour, is performed by the women. P. Charlevoix *Journal Historique d'un Voyage de L'Amerique* 4<sup>to</sup>. Par.

Par. 1744. p. 334. In such a state of society, the common wants of men being few, and their mutual dependence upon each other small, their union is extremely imperfect and feeble, and they continue to enjoy their natural liberty almost unimpaired. It is the first idea of an American, that every man is born free and independent, and that no power on earth hath any right to diminish or circumscribe his natural liberty. There is hardly any appearance of subordination either in civil or domestic government. Every one does what he pleases. A father and mother with their children, live like persons whom chance has brought together, and whom no common bond unites. Their manner of educating their children is suitable to this principle. They never chastise or punish them, even during their infancy. As they advance in years, they allow them to be entirely masters of their own actions, and responsible to nobody. Id. p. 272, 273.—

2. The power of their civil magistrates is extremely limited. Among most of their tribes, the Sachem or chief is elective. A council of old men is chosen to assist him, without whose advice he determines no affair of importance. The Sachems neither possess nor claim any great degree of authority. They propose and intreat rather than command. The obedience of their people is altogether voluntary. Id. p. 266. 268.—

3. The savages of America engage in any military enterprize, not from constraint, but choice. When war is resolved, a chief arises, and offers himself to be the leader. Such as are willing (for they compel no person) stand up

up one after another, and sing their war song. But if after this, any of these should refuse to follow the leader, to whom they have engaged, his life would be in danger, and he would be considered as the most infamous of all men. Id. p. 217, 218.

—4. Such as engage to follow any leader, expect to be treated by him with great attention and respect; and he is obliged to make them presents of considerable value. Id. p. 218.—5. Among the Americans, the magistrate has scarcely any criminal jurisdiction. Id. p. 272. Upon receiving any injury, the person or family offended, may inflict what punishment they please on the person who was the author of it. Id. p. 274. Their resentment and desire of vengeance are excessive and implacable. Time can neither extinguish nor abate it. It is the chief inheritance parents leave to their children; it is transmitted from generation to generation, until an occasion be found of satisfying it. Id. p. 309. Sometimes, however, the offended party is appeased. A compensation is paid for a murder that has been committed. The relations of the deceased receive it; and it consists most commonly of a captive taken in war, who being substituted in place of the person who was murdered, assumes his name, and is adopted into his family. Id. p. 274. The resemblance holds in many other particulars. It is sufficient for my purpose to have pointed out the similarity of those great features which distinguish and characterize both people. Bochart, and other philologists of the last century, who, with more erudition  
than

than science, endeavoured to trace the migrations of various nations, and who were apt, upon the slightest appearance of resemblance, to find an affinity between nations far removed from each other, and to conclude that they were descended from the same ancestors, would hardly have failed, on viewing such an amazing similarity, to pronounce with confidence, "That the Germans and Americans must be the same people." But a philosopher will satisfy himself with observing, "That the characters of nations depend on the state of society in which they live, and on the political institutions established among them; and that the human mind, whenever it is placed in the same situation, will, in ages the most distant, and in countries the most remote, assume the same form, and be distinguished by the same manners."

I HAVE pushed the comparison between the Germans and Americans no farther than was necessary for the illustration of my subject. I do not pretend that the state of society in the two countries was perfectly similar. Many of the German tribes were more civilized than the Americans. Some of them were not unacquainted with agriculture; almost all of them had flocks of tame cattle, and depended for the chief part of their subsistence upon these. Most of the American tribes subsist by hunting, and are in a ruder and more simple state than the ancient Germans. The resemblance, however, between their condition, is greater perhaps than any that history affords an opportunity

opportunity of observing between two races of uncivilized nations, and this has produced a surprising similarity of manners.

NOTE VII. SECT. I. p. 14. [G].

THE booty gained by an army belonged to the army. The King himself had no part of it but what he acquired by lot. A remarkable instance of this occurs in the history of the Franks. The army of Clovis, the founder of the French monarchy, having plundered a church, carried off, among other sacred utensils, a vase of extraordinary size and beauty. The bishop sent deputies to Clovis, beseeching him to restore the vase, that it might be again employed in the sacred services to which it had been consecrated. Clovis desired the deputies to follow him to Soissons, as the booty was to be divided in that place, and promised, that if the lot should give him the disposal of the vase, he would grant what the bishop desired. When he came to Soissons, and all the booty was placed in one great heap in the middle of the army, Clovis intreated, that before making the division, they would give him that vase over and above his share. All appeared willing to gratify the King, and to comply with his request, when a fierce and haughty soldier lifted up his battle-axe, and striking the vase with the utmost violence, cried out with a loud voice, " You shall receive nothing here but that to which the lot gives you a right." Gregor. Turon. *Histor. Francorum*, lib. ii. c. 27. p. 70. par. 1610.

## NOTE VIII. SECT. I. p. 18. [H].

THE history of the establishment and progress of the feudal system, is an interesting object to all the nations of Europe. In some countries, their jurisprudence and laws are still in a great measure feudal. In others, many forms and practices established by custom, or founded on statutes, took their rise from the feudal law, and cannot be understood without attending to the ideas peculiar to it. Several authors of the highest reputation for genius and erudition, have endeavoured to illustrate this subject, but they have left many parts of it obscure. I shall endeavour to trace, with precision, the progress and variation of ideas concerning property in land among the barbarous nations; and shall attempt to point out the causes which introduced these changes, as well as the effects which followed upon them. Property in land seems to have gone through four successive changes among the people who settled in the various provinces of the Roman Empire.

I. WHILE the barbarous nations remained in their original countries, their property in land was only temporary, and they had no certain limits to their possessions. After feeding their flocks in one district, they removed with them, their wives and families, to another; and abandoned that likewise in a short time. They were not, in consequence of this imperfect species of property, brought under any positive or formal obligation to serve the community;



munity; all their services were purely voluntary. Every individual was at liberty to chuse how far he would contribute towards carrying on any military enterprize. If he followed a leader in any expedition, it was from attachment, not from a sense of obligation. The clearest proof of this has been produced in Note VI. While property continued in this state, we can discover nothing that bears any resemblance to a feudal tenure, or to the subordination and military service which the feudal system introduced.

II. UPON settling in the countries which they had subdued, the victorious troops divided the conquered lands. Whatever portion of them fell to a soldier, he seized as the recompence due to his valour, as a settlement acquired by his own sword. He took possession of it as a freeman in full property. He enjoyed it during his own life, and could dispose of it at pleasure, or transmit it as an inheritance to his children. Thus property in land became fixed. It was at the same time *allodial*, i. e. the possessor had the entire right of property and dominion; he held of no sovereign or superior lord, to whom he was bound to do homage, and perform service. But as these new proprietors were in some danger (as has been observed in the text) of being disturbed by the remainder of the ancient inhabitants, and in still greater danger of being attacked by successive colonies of barbarians as fierce and rapacious as themselves, they saw the necessity of coming under obligations



obligations to defend the community, more explicit than those to which they had been subject in their original habitations. On this account, immediately upon their fixing in their new settlements, every freeman became bound to take arms in defence of the community, and if he refused or neglected so to do, was liable to a considerable penalty. I do not mean that any contract of this kind was formally concluded, or mutually ratified by any legal solemnity. It was established by tacit consent, like the other compacts which hold society together. Their mutual security and preservation made it the interest of all to recognize its authority, and to enforce the observation of it. We can trace back this new obligation on the proprietors of land, to a very early period in the history of the Franks. Chilperic, who began his reign A. D. 562, exacted a fine, *bannos jussit exigi*, from certain persons who had refused to accompany him in an expedition. Gregor. Turon. lib. v. c. 26. p. 211. Childibert, who began his reign A. D. 576, proceeded in the same manner against others who had been guilty of a like crime. Id. lib. vii. c. 42. p. 342. Such a fine could not have been exacted while property continued in its first state, and military service was entirely voluntary. Charlemagne ordained, that every freeman who possessed five mansi, i. e. sixty acres of land, *in property*, should march in person against the enemy. Capitul. A. D. 807. Louis le Debonnaire, A. D. 815, granted lands to certain Spaniards who fled from the Saracens, and allowed them to settle

in his territories, on condition that they should serve in the army *like other free men*. Capitul. vol. i. p. 500. By land possessed *in property*, which is mentioned in the law of Charlemagne, we are to understand, according to the stile of that age, allodial land; *alodes* and *proprietas alodum* and *proprium* being words perfectly synonymous. Du Cange voce *Alodis*. The clearest proof of the distinction between allodial and beneficiary possession, is contained in two charters published by Muratori, by which it appears that a person might possess one part of his estate as allodial, which he could dispose of at pleasure, the other as a *beneficium*, of which he had only the usufruct, the property returning to the superior Lord on his demise. Antiq. Ital. mediæ ævi, vol. i. p. 559. 565. The same distinction is pointed out in a Capitulare of Charlemagne, A. D. 812. edit. Baluz. vol. i. p. 491. Count Everard, who married a daughter of Louis le Debonnaire, in the curious testament, by which he disposes of his vast estate among his children, distinguishes between what he possessed *proprietate*, and what he held *beneficio*, and it appears that the greater part was allodial. A. D. 837. Aub. Miræi Opera Diplomatica Lovan. 1723. Vol. p. 19.

In the same manner *Liber homo* is commonly opposed to *Vassus* or *Vassallus*; the former denotes an allodial proprietor, the latter one who held of a superior. These *free men* were under an obligation to serve the state; and this duty was con-

sidered

sidered as so sacred, that free men were prohibited from entering into holy orders unless they had obtained the consent of the sovereign. The reason given for this in the statute is remarkable, "For we are informed that some do so, not so much out of devotion, as in order to avoid that military service which they are bound to perform. Capitul. lib. i. § 114. If, upon being summoned into the field, any free man refused to obey, a full *Herebannum*, i. e. a fine of sixty crowns, was to be exacted from him according to the law of the Franks." Capit. Car. Magn. ap. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 14. § 13. p. 539. This expression, according to the law of the Franks, seems to imply that both the obligation to serve, and the penalty on those who disregarded it, were coeval with the laws made by the Franks at their first settlement in Gaul. This fine was levied with such rigour, "That if any person convicted of this crime was insolvent, he was reduced to servitude, and continued in that state until such time as his labour should amount to the value of the *herebannum*." Ibid. The Emperor Lotharius rendered the penalty still more severe; and if any person possessing such an extent of property as made it incumbent on him to take the field in person, refused to obey the summons, all his goods were declared to be forfeited, and he himself might be punished with banishment. Murat. Script. Ital. vol. i. pars ii. p. 153.

III. PROPERTY in land having thus become fixed and subject to military service, another change was introduced, though slowly, and step by step. We learn from Tacitus, that the chief men among the Germans endeavoured to attach to their persons and interests certain adherents whom he calls *Comites*. These fought under their standard, and followed them in all their enterprises. The same custom continued among them in their new settlements, and those attached or devoted followers were called *fideles antrustiones*, *homines in truste Dominica*, *leudes*. Tacitus informs us, that the rank of a Comes was deemed honourable; De morib. Germ. c. 13. The composition, which is the standard by which we must judge of the rank and condition of persons in the middle ages, paid for the murder of one *in truste Dominica*, was triple to that paid for the murder of a freeman. Leg. Salicor. Tit. 44. § 1. & 2. While the Germans remained in their own country they courted the favour of these *Comites* by presents of arms and horses, and by hospitality. See Note VI. As long as they had no fixed property in land, these were the only gifts that they could bestow, and the only reward which their followers desired. But upon their settling in the countries which they conquered, and when the value of property came to be understood among them, instead of those slight presents, the Kings and chieftains bestowed a more substantial recompence in land on their adherents. These grants were called *beneficia*, because

cause they were gratuitous donations; and *honores*, because they were regarded as marks of distinction. What were the services originally exacted in return for these *beneficia* cannot be determined with absolute precision; because there are no records so ancient. When allodial possessions were first rendered feudal, they were not, at once, subjected to all the feudal services. The transition here, as in all other changes of importance, was gradual. As the great object of a feudal vassal was to obtain protection, when allodial proprietors first consented to become vassals of any powerful leader, they continued to retain as much of their ancient independence as was consistent with that new relation. The homage which they did to the superior of whom they chose to hold, was called *homagium planum*, and bound them to nothing more than fidelity, but without any obligation either of military service, or attendance in the courts of their superior. Of this *homagium planum* some traces, though obscure, may still be discovered. Bruffel, tom. i. p. 97. Among the ancient writs published by D. D. De Vic & Vaisette hist. de Langued. are a great many which they call *homagia*. They seem to be an intermediate step between the *homagium planum* mentioned by Bruffel, and the engagement to perform complete feudal service. The one party promises protection, and grants certain castles or lands, the other engages to defend the person of the granter, and to assist him likewise in defending his property as often as he shall

be summoned to do so. But these engagements are accompanied with none of the feudal formalities, and no mention is made of any of the other feudal services. They appear rather to be a mutual contract between equals, than the engagement of a vassal to perform services to a superior lord. Preuves de l'hist. de Lang. tom. ii. 173. & passim. As soon as men were accustomed to these, the other feudal services were gradually introduced. M. de Montesquieu considers these *beneficia* as fiefs, which originally subjected those who held them to military service. L'espr. des Loix, l. xxx. c. 3. & 16. M. L'abbé de Mably contends that such as held these were at first subjected to no other service than what was incumbent on every free man. Observations sur l'histoire de France, I. 356. But upon comparing their proofs and reasonings and conjectures, it seems to be evident, that as every free man, in consequence of his allodial property, was bound to serve the community under a severe penalty, no good reason can be assigned for conferring these *beneficia*, if they did not subject such as received them, to some new obligation. Why should a King have stripped himself of his domain, if he had not expected, that, by parcelling it out, he might acquire a right to services to which he had formerly no title? We may then warrantably conclude, "That as allodial property subjected those who possessed it to serve the community, so *beneficial* subjected such as held them, to personal service and fidelity

to

to him from whom they received these lands. These *beneficia* were granted originally only during pleasure. No circumstance relating to the customs of the middle ages is better ascertained than this; and innumerable proofs of it might be added to those produced in L'esprit des Loix, l. xxx. c. 16. and by Du Cange voc. *beneficium* & *feudum*.

IV. But the possession of benefices did not continue long in this state. A precarious tenure during pleasure, was not sufficient to satisfy such as held it, and by various means they gradually obtained the confirmation of their benefices during life. Feudor. lib. tit. i. Du Cange produces several quotations from ancient charters and chronicles in proof of this; Gloss. voc. *Beneficium*. After this it was easy to obtain or extort charters rendering *beneficia* hereditary, first in the direct line, then in the collateral, and at last in the female line. Leg. Longob. lib. iii. tit. 8. Du Cange, voc. *Beneficium*.

It is no easy matter to fix the precise time when each of these changes took place. M. l'Ab. Mably conjectures with some probability, that Charles Martel first introduced the practice of granting *beneficia* for life: Observat. tom. i. p. 103. 160; and that Louis le Debonnaire was among the first who rendered them hereditary, is evident from the authorities to which he refers; Id. 429. Mabillon however has published a placitum of Louis le Debonnaire, A. D. 860, by which it appears, that he



still continued to grant some *beneficia* only during life. De re Diplomatica, lib. vi. p. 353. In the year 889, Odo King of France granted lands to Ricabodo *fideli suo jure beneficiario & fructuario* during his own life; and if he should die, and a son were born to him, that right was to continue during the life of his son. Mabillon ut supra, p. 556. This was an intermediate step between fiefs merely during life, and fiefs hereditary to perpetuity. While *beneficia* continued under their first form, and were held only during pleasure, he who granted them not only exercised the *Dominium* or prerogative of superior Lord, but he retained the property, giving his vassal only the *usufruct*. But under the latter form, when they became hereditary, although feudal lawyers continued to define a *beneficium* agreeably to its original nature, the property was in effect taken out of the hands of the superior lords, and lodged in those of the vassal. As soon as the reciprocal advantages of the feudal mode of tenure came to be understood by superiors as well as vassals, that species of holding became so agreeable to both, that not only lands, but casual rents, such as the profits of a toll, the fare paid at ferries, &c. the salaries or perquisites of offices, and even pensions themselves, were granted and held as fiefs; and military service was promised and exacted on account of these. Morice Mem. pour servir de preuves a l'hist. de Bretagne, tom. ii. 78. 690. Brussel, tom. i. p. 41. How absurd soever it may seem to grant or to hold such precarious

rious and casual property as a fief, there are instances of feudal tenures still more singular. The profits arising from the masses said at an altar, were properly an ecclesiastical revenue, belonging to the clergy of the church or monastery which performed that duty, but these were sometimes seized by the powerful barons. In order to ascertain their right to them, they held them as fiefs of the church, and parcelled them out in the same manner as other property to their sub-vassals. Bouquet. *recueil des hist.* vol. x. 238. 480. The same spirit of encroachment which rendered fiefs hereditary, led the nobles to extort from their sovereigns hereditary grants of offices. Many of the great offices of the crown became hereditary in most of the kingdoms in Europe; and so conscious were monarchs of this spirit of usurpation among the nobility, and so solicitous to guard against it, that, on some occasions, they obliged the persons whom they promoted to any office of dignity, to grant an obligation that neither they, nor their heirs, should claim it as belonging to them by hereditary right. A remarkable instance of this is produced, *Mem. de l'Acad. des Inscript.* tom. xxx. p. 595. Another occurs in the *Thesaur. anecdot.* published by Martene & Durand, vol. i. p. 873.—This revolution in property occasioned a change corresponding to it in political government; the great vassals of the crown, as they acquired such extensive possessions, usurped a proportional degree of power, depressed the jurisdiction of the crown, and trampled on the

the privileges of the people. It is on account of this connection, that it becomes an object of importance in history to trace the progress of feudal property, for, upon discovering in what state property was at any particular period, we may determine with precision what was the degree of power possessed by the King or by the nobility at that juncture.

ONE circumstance more, with respect to the changes which property underwent, deserves attention. I have shewn, that when the various tribes of barbarians divided their conquests in the fifth and sixth centuries, the property which they acquired was allodial; but in several parts of Europe, property had become almost entirely feudal by the beginning of the tenth century. The former species of property seems to be so much better and more desirable than the latter; that such a change appears surprising, especially when we are informed that allodial property was frequently converted into feudal, by a voluntary deed of the possessor. The motives which determined them to a choice so repugnant to the ideas of modern times concerning property, have been investigated and explained by M. de Montesquieu with his usual discernment and accuracy, lib. xxxi. c. 8. The most considerable is that of which we have an hint in Lambertus Ardensis, an ancient writer quoted by Du Cange, voce *Alodis*. In those times of anarchy and disorder which became general in Europe  
after

after the death of Charlemagne, when there was scarcely any union among the different members of the community, and individuals were exposed, single and undefended by government, to rapine and oppression, it became necessary for every man to have a powerful protector, under whose banner he might range himself, and obtain security against enemies whom he could not singly oppose. For this reason he relinquished his allodial independence, and subjected himself to the feudal services, that he might find safety under the patronage of some respectable superior. In some parts of Europe, this change from allodial to feudal property became so general, that he who possessed land had no longer any liberty of choice left. He was obliged to recognize some liege lord, and to hold of him. Thus Beaumanoir informs us, that in the counties of Clermont and Beauvois, if the Lord or Count discovered any lands within his jurisdiction, for which no service was performed, and which paid to him no tax or customs, he might instantly seize it as his own; for, says he, according to our custom no man can hold allodial property. Coust. ch. 24. p. 123. Upon the same principle is founded a maxim, which has at length become general in the law of France, *Nulle terre sans Seigneur*. In other provinces of France, allodial property seems to have remained longer unalienated, and to have been more highly valued. A vast number of charters, containing grants, or sales, or exchanges of allodial lands in the province of Languedoc, are published Hist. gener. de Langued.

par

par D. D. De Vic & Vaifette, tom. ii. During the ninth, tenth, and great part of the eleventh century, the property in that province seems to have been entirely allodial; and scarcely any mention of feudal tenures occurs in the deeds of that country. The state of property, during these centuries, seems to have been perfectly similar in Catalonia, and the country of Rouffillon, as appears from the original charters published in the Appendix to Petr. de la Marca's treatise *de Marca five limite Hispanico*. Allodial property seems to have continued in the Low Countries, to a period still later. During the eleventh, twelfth, and thirteenth centuries, this species of property appears to have been of considerable extent. *Miræi opera Diplom.* vol. i. 34, 74, 75, 83, 817, 296, 842, 847, 578. Some vestiges of allodial property appear there as late as the fourteenth century. *Ibid.* 218. Several facts which prove that allodial property subsisted in different parts of Europe long after the introduction of feudal tenures, and which tend to illustrate the distinction between these two different species of possession, are produced by M. Houard. *Anciennes Loix des François, conservées dans les Coutumes Angloises*, vol. i. p. 192, &c. The notions of men with respect to property, vary according to the diversity of their understandings, and the caprice of their passions. At the same time that some persons were fond of relinquishing allodial property, in order to hold it by feudal tenure, others seem to have been solicitous to convert their fiefs into allodial property. An instance of this occurs

occurs in a charter of Louis le Debonnaire, published by Eckhard, *Commentarii de rebus Franciæ Orientalis*, vol. ii. p. 885. Another occurs in the year 1299. *Reliquiæ MSS. omnis ævi*, by Ludwig, vol. i. p. 209, and even one as late as the year 1337, *ibid.* vol. vii. p. 40. The same thing took place in the Low Countries. *Miræi oper.* i. 52.

IN tracing these various revolutions of property, I have hitherto chiefly confined myself to what happened in France, because the ancient monuments of that nation have either been more carefully preserved, or have been more clearly illustrated than those of any people in Europe.

IN Italy, the same revolutions happened in property, and succeeded each other in the same order. There is some ground, however, for conjecturing that allodial property continued longer in estimation among the Italians, than among the French. It appears, that many of the charters granted by the Emperors in the ninth century, conveyed an allodial right to land. *Murat. antiq. med. ævi*, v. i. p. 575, &c. But in the eleventh century, we find some examples of persons who resigned their allodial property, and received it back as a feudal tenure. *Id.* p. 610, &c. Muratori observes, that the word *feudum*, which came to be substituted in place of *beneficium*, does not occur in any authentick charter previous to the eleventh century. *Id.* 594. A charter of King Robert of France, A. D. 1008, is the earliest deed in which I have met with  
the

the word *feudum*. Bouquet recueil des historiens de Gaule & de la France, tom. x. p. 593, b. This word occurs indeed in an edict, A. D. 790, published by Bruffel, vol. i. p. 77. But the authenticity of that deed has been called in question, and perhaps the frequent use of the word *feudum* in it, is an additional reason for doing so. The account which I have given of the nature both of allodial and feudal possessions receives some confirmation from the etymology of the words themselves. *Alode* or *allodium* is compounded of the German particle *an* and *lot*, i. e. land obtained by lot. Wachteri Glossar. Germanicum, voc. *Allo-dium*, p. 35. It appears from the authorities produced by him and by Du Cange, voc. *fors*, that the northern nations divided the lands which they had conquered in this manner. Feodum is compounded of *od* possession or estate, and *feo* wages, pay; intimating that it was stipendiary, and granted as a recompence for service. Wachterus ibid. voc. *feodum*, p. 441.

THE progress of the feudal system among the Germans was perfectly similar to that which we have traced in France. But as the Emperors of Germany, especially after the Imperial crown passed from the descendants of Charlemagne to the house of Saxony, were far superior to the contemporary Monarchs of France, in abilities, the Imperial vassals did not aspire so early to independence, nor did they so soon obtain the privilege of possessing their benefices by hereditary right.



right. According to the compilers of the *Libri Feudorum*, Conrad II. or the Salic, was the first Emperor, who rendered fiefs hereditary. *Lib. i. tit. i.* Conrad began his reign A.D. 1024. Ludovicus Pius, under whose reign grants of hereditary fiefs were frequent in France, succeeded his father A.D. 814. Not only was this innovation so much later in being introduced among the vassals of the German Emperors, but even after Conrad had established it, the law continued favourable to the ancient practice, and unless the charter of the vassal bore expressly that the fief descended to his heirs, it was presumed to be granted only during life. *Lib. feud. ibid.* Even after the alteration made by Conrad, it was not uncommon in Germany to grant fiefs only for life; a charter of this kind occurs as late as the year 1376. *Charta ap. Boehmer. Princip. Jur. feud. p. 361.* The transmission of fiefs to collateral and female heirs, took place very slowly among the Germans. There is extant a charter, A.D. 1201, conveying the right of succession to females, but it is granted as an extraordinary mark of favour, and in reward of uncommon services. *Boehmer. ibid. p. 365.* In Germany, as well as in France and Italy, a considerable part of the lands continued to be allodial long after the feudal mode of tenure was introduced. It appears from the *Codex Diplomaticus Monasterii Buch*, that a great part of the lands in the marquisate of Misnia was still allodial as late as the thirteenth century. N<sup>o</sup> 31, 36, 37, 46, &c. *ap. Scriptores hist. German.*

man. cura Schoetgenii & Kreyfigii. Altenb. 1755. vol. ii. 183, &c. Allodial property seems to have been common in another district of the same province, during the same period. Reliquiæ Diplomaticæ Sanctimonial. Beutiz. N<sup>o</sup> 17, 36, 58, ibid. 374, &c.

#### NOTE IX. SECT. I. p. 19. [I].

As I shall have occasion, in another note, to represent the condition of that part of the people who dwelt in cities, I will confine myself in this to consider the state of the inhabitants of the country. The persons employed in cultivating the ground during the ages under review may be divided into three classes; I. *Servi* or slaves. This seems to have been the most numerous class, and consisted either of captives taken in war, or of persons the property in whom was acquired in some one of the various methods enumerated by Du Cange, voc. *servus*, v. 6. p. 447. The wretched condition of this numerous race of men will appear from several circumstances. I. Their masters had absolute dominion over their persons. They had the power of punishing their slaves capitally, without the intervention of any judge. This dangerous right they possessed not only in the more early periods, when their manners were fierce, but it continued as late as the twelfth century. Joach. Potgiesserus de statu servorum. Lemgov. 1736. 4to. lib. ii. cap. 1. § 4, 10, 13, 24. Even after this jurisdiction of masters came to be restrained, the life of a slave was deemed to be

be of so little value, that a very slight compensation atoned for taking it away. Idem, lib. iii. c. 6. If masters had power over the lives of their slaves, it is evident that almost no bounds would be set to the rigour of the punishments which they might inflict upon them. The Codes of ancient laws prescribed punishments for the crimes of slaves different from those which were inflicted on free men. The latter paid only a fine or compensation, the former were subjected to corporal punishments. The cruelty of these was in many instances excessive. Slaves might be put to the rack on very slight occasions. The laws with respect to these points are to be found in Potgiesserus, lib. iii. cap. 7. 2. If the dominion of masters over the lives and persons of their slaves was thus extensive, it was no less so over their actions and property. They were not originally permitted to marry. Male and female slaves were allowed and even encouraged to cohabit together. But this union was not considered as a marriage, it was called *contubernium*, not *nuptiæ* or *matrimonium*. Potgiess. lib. ii. c. 2. § 1. This notion was so much established, that during several centuries after the barbarous nations embraced the Christian religion, slaves who lived as husband and wife, were not joined together by any religious ceremony, and did not receive the nuptial benediction from a priest. Ibid. § 10, 11. When this conjunction between slaves came to be considered as a lawful marriage, they were not permitted to marry without the consent of their master, and

such as ventured to do so without obtaining that, were punished with great severity, and sometimes were put to death. Potgieff. *ibid.* § 12, &c. Gregor. Turon. *hist. lib. v. c. 3.* When the manners of the European nations became more gentle, and their ideas more liberal, slaves who married without their master's consent, were subjected only to a fine. Potgieff. *ibid.* § 20. Du Cange Gloss. voc. *Forismaritagium.* 3. All the children of slaves were in the same condition with their parents, and became the property of the master. Du Cange Gloss. voc. *servus*, vol. vi. 450. Murat. *antiq. Ital. vol. i. 766.* 4. Slaves were so entirely the property of their masters, that they could sell them at pleasure. While domestick slavery continued, property in a slave was sold in the same manner with that which a person had in any other moveable. Afterwards slaves became *adscripti glebæ*, and were conveyed by sale, together with the farm or estate to which they belonged. Potgiefferus has collected the laws and charters which illustrate this well-known circumstance in the condition of slaves. Lib. ii. c. 4. 5. Slaves had a title to nothing but subsistence and clothes from their master; all the profits of their labour accrued to him. If a master, from indulgence, gave his slaves any *peculium* or fixed allowance for their subsistence, they had no right of property in what they saved out of that. All that they accumulated belonged to their master. Potgieff. lib. ii. c. 10. Murat. *antiq. Ital. vol. 768.* Du Cange, voc. *servus*, vol. vi. p. 451. Con-

formably to the same principle, all the effects of slaves belonged to their master at their death, and they could not dispose of them by testament. Potgieff. lib. ii. c. 11. 6. Slaves were distinguished from free men by a peculiar dress. Among all the barbarous nations, long hair was a mark of dignity and of freedom, slaves were for that reason obliged to shave their heads; and by this distinction, how indifferent soever it may be in its own nature, they were reminded every moment of the inferiority of their condition. Potgieff. lib. iii. c. 4. For the same reason it was enacted in the laws of almost all the nations of Europe, that no slave should be admitted to give evidence against a free man in a court of justice. Du Cange, voc. *servus*, vol. vi. p. 451. Potgieff. lib. iii. c. 3.

2. *Villani*. They were likewise *adscripti glebæ* or *villæ*, from which they derived their name, and were transferable along with it. Du Cange, voc. *villanus*. But in this they differed from slaves, that they paid a fixed rent to their master for the land which they cultivated, and after paying that, all the fruits of their labour and industry belonged to themselves in property. This distinction is marked by Piere de Fontain's Conseil. Vie de St. Louis par Joinville, p. 119. edit. de Du Cange. Several cases decided agreeably to this principle are mentioned by Murat. Ibid. p. 773.

3. THE last class of persons employed in agriculture were free men. These are distinguished

by various names among the writers of the middle ages, *Arimanni*, *conditionales*, *originarii*, *tributales*, &c. These seem to have been persons who possessed some small allodial property of their own, and besides that, cultivated some farm belonging to their more wealthy neighbours, for which they paid a fixed rent; and bound themselves likewise to perform several small services *in prato vel in messe*, *in aratura vel in vinea*, such as ploughing a certain quantity of their landlord's ground, assisting him in harvest and vintage work, &c. The clearest proof of this may be found in Muratori, v. i. p. 712. and in Du Cange under the respective words above mentioned. I have not been able to discover whether these *arimanni*, &c. were removeable at pleasure, or held their farms by lease for a certain number of years. The former, if we may judge from the genius and maxims of the age, seems to be most probable. These persons, however, were considered as free men in the most honourable sense of the word; they enjoyed all the privileges of that condition, and were even called to serve in war; an honour to which no slave was admitted. Murat. Antiq. vol. i. p. 743. vol. ii. p. 446. This account of the condition of these three different classes of persons, will enable the reader to apprehend the full force of an argument which I shall produce in confirmation of what I have said in the text concerning the wretched state of the people during the middle ages. Notwithstanding the immense difference between the first of these classes and the third, such was the spirit

spirit of tyranny which prevailed among the great proprietors of lands, and so various their opportunities of oppressing those who were settled on their estates, and of rendering their condition intolerable, that many free men, in despair, renounced their liberty, and voluntarily surrendered themselves as slaves to their powerful masters. This they did, in order that their masters might become more immediately interested to afford them protection, together with the means of subsisting themselves and their families. The forms of such a surrender, or *obnoxio*, as it was then called, are preserved by Marculfus, lib. ii. c. 28; and by the anonymous author published by M. Bignon, together with the collection of *formulae* compiled by Marculfus, c. 16. In both, the reason given for the *obnoxio*, is the wretched and indigent condition of the person who gives up his liberty. It was still more common for free men to surrender their liberty to bishops or abbots, that they might partake of the security which the vassals and slaves of churches and monasteries enjoyed, in consequence of the superstitious veneration paid to the saint under whose immediate protection they were supposed to be taken. Du Cange, voc. *oblatus*, vol. iv. p. 1286. That condition must have been miserable indeed, which could induce a free man voluntarily to renounce his liberty, and to give up himself as a slave to the disposal of another. The number of slaves in every nation of Europe was prodigious. The greater part of the inferior



class of people in France were reduced to this state, at the commencement of the third race of Kings. L'espr. des Loix, liv. xxx. c. 11. The same was the case in England. Brady Pref. to Gen. Hist. Many curious facts with respect to the ancient state of *villains* or slaves in England, are published in Observations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, 2d edit. p. 244.

NOTE X. SECT. I. p. 22. [K].

INNUMERABLE proofs of this might be produced. Many charters granted by persons of the highest rank are preserved, from which it appears that they could not subscribe their name. It was usual for persons who could not write, to make the sign of the cross in confirmation of a charter. Several of these remain, where Kings and persons of great eminence affix *signum crucis manu propria pro ignoratione literarum*. Du Cange, voc. Crux, vol. iii. p. 1191. From this is derived the phrase of signing instead of subscribing a paper. In the ninth century, Herbaud Comes Palatii, though supreme judge of the Empire by virtue of his office, could not subscribe his name. Nouveau Traité de Diplomatique par deux Benedictins, 4to. tom. ii. p. 422. As late as the fourteenth century, Du Guesclin, constable of France, the greatest man in the state, and one of the greatest men of his age, could neither read nor write. St. Palaye Mémoires sur l'ancienne Chevalerie, tit. ii. p. 82.

p. 82. Nor was this ignorance confined to laymen; the greater part of the clergy was not many degrees superior to them in science. Many dignified ecclesiasticks could not subscribe the canons of those councils, in which they sat as members. *Nouv. Traité de Diplom.* tom. ii. p. 424. One of the questions appointed by the canons to be put to persons who were candidates for orders was this, "Whether they could read the gospels and epistles, and explain the sense of them, at least literally?" *Regino Prumienfis ap. Bruck. Hist. Philos.* v. iii. p. 631. Alfred the Great complained, that from the Humber to the Thames there was not a priest who understood the liturgy in his mother-tongue, or who could translate the easiest piece of Latin; and that from the Thames to the sea, the ecclesiasticks were still more ignorant. *Afferus de rebus gestis Alfredi, ap. Camdeni Anglica, &c.* p. 25. The ignorance of the clergy is quaintly described by an author of the dark ages. "Potius dedidi gulæ quam Glossæ; potius colligunt libras quam legunt libros; libentius intuentur Martham quam Marcum; malunt legere in Salmone quam in Solomone. *Alanus de art. Predicat. ap. Lebeuf. Dissert.* tom. ii. p. 21. To the obvious causes of such universal ignorance, arising from the state of government and manners, from the seventh to the eleventh century, we may add the scarcity of books during that period, and the difficulty of rendering them more common. The Romans wrote their books either on parch-

ment or on paper made of the Egyptian papyrus. The latter being the cheapest, was of course the most commonly used. But after the Saracens conquered Egypt in the seventh century, the communication between that country and the people settled in Italy or in other parts of Europe, was almost entirely broken off, and the papyrus was no longer in use among them. They were obliged, on that account, to write all their books upon parchment, and as the price of that was high, books became extremely rare and of great value. We may judge of the scarcity of the materials for writing them from one circumstance. There still remain several manuscripts of the eighth, ninth, and following centuries, wrote on parchment, from which some former writing had been erased, in order to substitute a new composition in its place. In this manner, it is probable, that several works of the ancients perished. A book of Livy or of Tacitus might be erased, to make room for the legendary tale of a saint, or the superstitious prayers of a missal. Murat. *Antiq. Ital.* v. iii. p. 833. P. de Montfauçon affirms, that the greater part of the manuscripts on parchment which he has seen, those of an ancient date excepted, are written on parchment from which some former treatise had been erased. *Mem. de l'Acad. des inscript.* tom. ix. p. 325. As the want of materials for writing, is one reason why so many of the works of the ancients have perished, it accounts likewise for the small number of manuscripts of  
any

any kind, previous to the eleventh century, when they began to multiply from a cause which shall be mentioned. *Hist. Liter. de France*, tom. vi. p. 6. Many circumstances prove the scarcity of books during these ages. Private persons seldom possessed any books whatever. Even monasteries of considerable note had only one missal. *Murat. Antiq.* v. ix. p. 789. Lupus, abbot of Ferrieres, in a letter to the Pope, A. D. 855, beseeches him to lend him a copy of Cicero de Oratore & Quintilian's Institutions, "for," says he, "although we have parts of those books, there is no complete copy of them in all France. *Murat. Ant.* v. iii. p. 835. The price of books became so high, that persons of a moderate fortune could not afford to purchase them. The countess of Anjou paid for a copy of the Homilies of Haimon, bishop of Halberstadt, two hundred sheep, five quarters of wheat, and the same quantity of rye and millet. *Histoire Literaire de France par des Religieux Benedictins*, tom. vii. p. 3. Even so late as the year 1471, when Louis XI. borrowed the works of Rasis, the Arabian physician, from the faculty of medicine in Paris, he not only deposited in pledge a considerable quantity of plate, but was obliged to procure a nobleman to join with him as surety in a deed, binding himself under a great forfeiture to restore it. *Gabr. Naudè Addit. à l'histoire de Louys XI. par Comines. edit. de Fresnoy*, tom. iv. p. 281. Many curious circumstances with respect to the extravagant price of books in the

the middle ages, are collected by that industrious compiler, to whom I refer such of my readers as deem this small branch of literary history an object of curiosity. When any person made a present of a book to a church or a monastery, in which were the only libraries during these ages, it was deemed a donative of such value, that he offered it on the altar *pro remedio animæ suæ*, in order to obtain the forgiveness of his sins. Murat. vol. iii. p. 836. Hist. Liter. de France, tom. vi. p. 6. Nouv. Trait. du Diplomat. par deux Benedictins, 4to. tom. i. p. 481. In the eleventh century, the art of making paper in the manner now become universal, was invented; by means of that not only the number of manuscripts increased, but the study of the sciences was wonderfully facilitated. Murat. ib. p. 871. The invention of the art of making paper, and the invention of the art of printing, are two considerable events in literary history. It is remarkable that the former preceded the first dawning of letters and improvement in knowledge towards the close of the eleventh century; the latter ushered in the light which spread over Europe at the æra of the Reformation.

#### NOTE XI. SECT. I. p. 23. [L].

ALL the religious maxims and practices of the dark ages are a proof of this. I shall produce one remarkable testimony in confirmation of it, from an author canonized by the church of Rome, St. Eloy or Egidius, bishop of Noyon, in the seventh century.

century. "He is a good Christian who comes frequently to church; who presents the oblation which is offered to God upon the altar; who doth not taste of the fruits of his own industry until he has consecrated a part of them to God; who, when the holy festivals approach, lives chastely even with his own wife during several days, that with a safe conscience he may draw near the altar of God; and who, in the last place, can repeat the Creed and the Lord's Prayer. Redeem then your souls from destruction while you have the means in your power; offer presents and tythes to churchmen; come more frequently to church; humbly implore the patronage of the saints; for if you observe these things, you may come with security in the day of retribution to the tribunal of the eternal judge, and say, "Give to us, O Lord, for we have given unto thee." Dacherii Specilegium Vet. Script. v. ii. p. 94. The learned and judicious translator of Dr. Mosheim's Ecclesiastical History, from one of whose additional notes I have borrowed this passage, subjoins a very proper reflection; "We see here a large and ample description of a good Christian, in which there is not the least mention of the love of God, resignation to his will, obedience to his laws, or of justice, benevolence, and charity towards men." Mosh. Eccles. Hist. v. i. p. 324.

## NOTE XII. SECT. I. p. 23. [M].

IT is no inconsiderable misfortune to the church of Rome, whose doctrine of infallibility renders all such

such institutions and ceremonies as have been once universally received, immutable and everlasting, that she must continue to observe in enlightened times, those rites which were introduced during the ages of darkness and credulity. What delighted and edified the latter, must disgust and shock the former. Many of these rites appear manifestly to have been introduced by a superstition of the lowest and most illiberal species. Many of them were borrowed, with little variation, from the religious ceremonies established among the ancient Heathens. Some were so ridiculous, that if every age did not furnish instances of the fascinating influence of superstition, as well as of the whimsical forms which it assumes, it must appear incredible that they should ever be received or tolerated. In several churches of France, they celebrated a festival in commemoration of the Virgin Mary's flight into Egypt. It was called the feast of the Asfs. A young girl richly dressed, with a child in her arms, was set upon an afs superbly caparisoned. The afs was led to the altar in solemn procession. High Mass was said with great pomp. The afs was taught to kneel at proper places; a hymn no less childish than impious was sung in his praise: And when the ceremony was ended, the priest, instead of the usual words with which he dismissed the people, brayed three times like an afs; and the people, instead of their usual response, *We bless the Lord*, brayed three times in the same manner. Du Cange, *voc. Festum*. v. iii. p. 424. This ridiculous



diculous ceremony was not, like the festival of fools, and some other pageants of those ages, a mere farcical entertainment exhibited in a church, and mingled, as was then the custom, with an imitation of some religious rites; it was an act of devotion, performed by the ministers of religion, and by the authority of the church. However, as this practice did not prevail universally in the Catholic church, its absurdity contributed at last to abolish it.

### NOTE XIII. SECT. I. p. 29. [N].

As there is no event in the history of mankind more singular than that of the Crusades, every circumstance that tends to explain or to give any rational account of this extraordinary frenzy of the human mind is interesting. I have asserted in the text, that the minds of men were prepared gradually for the amazing effort which they made in consequence of the exhortations of Peter the hermit, by several occurrences previous to his time. A more particular detail of this curious and obscure part of history, may perhaps appear to some of my readers to be of importance. That the end of the world was expected about the close of the tenth and beginning of the eleventh century; and that this occasioned a general alarm, is evident from the authors to whom I refer in the text. This belief was so universal and so strong, that it mingled itself with their civil transactions. Many charters, in the latter part of the tenth century, begin in

this manner: "Apropinquante mundi termino," &c. As the end of the world is now at hand, and by various calamities and judgments the signs of its approach are now manifest. Hist. de Langued. par D. D. de Vic Vaisette, tom. ii. Preuves, p. 86, 89, 90, 117, 158, &c. One effect of this opinion was, that a great number of pilgrims resorted to Jerusalem, with a resolution to die there, or to wait the coming of the Lord; Kings, Earls, Marquisses, Bishops, and even a great number of women, besides persons of inferior rank, flocked to the Holy Land. Glaber. Rodulph. Hist. chez Bouquet Recueil, tom x. p. 50, 52. Another historian mentions a vast cavalcade of pilgrims who accompanied the count of Angouleme to Jerusalem in the year 1026. Chronic. Ademari, ibid. p. 162. These pilgrims filled Europe with lamentable accounts of the state of Christians in the Holy Land. Willerm. Tyr. Hist. ap. Gest. Dei per Franc. vol. ii. p. 636. Guibert. Abbat. Hist. ibid. vol. i. p. 476. Besides this, it was usual for many of the Christian inhabitants of Jerusalem, as well as of other cities in the East, to travel as mendicants through Europe; and by describing the wretched condition of the professors of the Christian faith under the dominion of Infidels, to extort charity, and to excite zealous persons to make some attempt in order to deliver them from oppression. Baldrici Archiepiscopi Histor. ap. Gest. Dei, &c. vol. i. p. 86. In the year 986, Gerbert, archbishop of Ravenna, afterwards Pope Silvester II. addressed a letter to all Christians

Christians in the name of the church of Jerusalem. It is eloquent and pathetic, and contains a formal exhortation to take arms against the Pagan oppressors, in order to rescue the holy city from their yoke. Gerberti Epistolæ ap. Bouquet, Recueil, tom. x. p. 426. In consequence of this spirited call, some subjects of the republick of Pisa equipped a fleet, and invaded the territories of the Mahometans in Syria. Murat. Script. Rer. Italic. vol. iii. p. 400. The alarm was taken in the East, and an opinion prevailed, A. D. 1010, that all the forces of Christendom were to unite, in order to drive the Mahometans out of Palestine. Chron. Ademari ap. Bouquet, tom. x. p. 152. It is evident from all these particulars, that the ideas which led the Crusaders to undertake their wild enterprize were gradually formed; so that the universal concourse to the standard of the cross when erected by Urban II. will appear less surprising.

IF the various circumstances which I have enumerated in this note, as well as in the history, are sufficient to account for the ardour with which such vast numbers engaged in such a dangerous undertaking, the extensive privileges and immunities granted to the persons who assumed the cross, serve to account for the long continuance of this spirit in Europe.

1. They were exempted from prosecutions on account of debt during the time of their being engaged in this holy service. Du Cange, voc. *Crucis privilegium*, v. ii. p. 1194.—
2. They were exempted from paying interest for the money which they had borrowed.

borrowed. Ibid.—3. They were exempted either entirely, or at least during a certain time, from the payment of taxes. Ibid. *Ordonances des Rois de France*, tom. i. p. 33.—4. They might alienate their lands without the consent of the superior lord of whom they held. Ib.—5. Their persons and effects were taken under the protection of St. Peter, and the anathemas of the church were denounced against all who should molest them, or carry on any quarrel or hostility against them, during their absence, on account of the holy war. Du Cange, Ib. *Guibertus Abbas ap. Bongars.* i. p. 480, 482.—6. They enjoyed all the privileges of Ecclesiasticks, and were not bound to plead in any civil court, but were declared subject to the spiritual jurisdiction alone. Du Cange, Ib. *Ordon. des Rois*, tom. i. p. 34, 174.—7. They obtained a plenary remission of all their sins, and the gates of heaven were set open to them, without requiring any proof of their penitence, but their engaging in this expedition, and thus gratifying their favourite passion, the love of war. *Guibert. Abbas*, p. 480. When we behold the civil and ecclesiastical powers vying with each other, and straining their invention in order to devise expedients for encouraging and adding strength to the spirit of superstition, can we be surprised that it should become so general as to render it infamous, and a mark of cowardice to decline engaging in the holy war? *Willierm Tyrensis ap. Bongars.* vol. ii. p. 641. The histories of the Crusades written by modern authors, who are

apt to substitute the ideas and maxims of their own age in the place of those which influenced the persons whose actions they attempt to relate, convey a very imperfect notion of the spirit at that time predominant in Europe. The original historians, who were animated themselves with the same passions which possessed their contemporaries, exhibit to us a more striking picture of the times and manners which they describe. The enthusiastic rapture with which they account for the effects of the Pope's discourse in the council of Clermont; the exultation with which they mention the numbers who devoted themselves to this holy warfare; the confidence with which they rely on the divine protection; the extasy of joy with which they describe their taking possession of the holy city, will enable us to conceive in some degree the extravagance of that zeal which agitated the minds of men with such violence, and will suggest as many singular reflections to a philosopher, as any occurrence in the history of mankind. It is unnecessary to select the particular passages in the several historians which confirm this observation. But lest these authors may be suspected of adorning their narrative with any exaggerated description, I shall appeal to one of the leaders who conducted the enterprize. There is extant a letter from Stephen, the earl of Chartres and Blois, to Adela his wife, in which he gives her an account of the progress of the Crusaders. He describes the Crusaders as the chosen army of Christ, as the servants and sol-

diers of God, as men who marched under the immediate protection of the Almighty, being conducted by his hand to victory and conquest. He speaks of the Turks as accursed, sacrilegious, and devoted by heaven to destruction; and when he mentions the soldiers in the Christian army who had died, or were killed, he is confident that their souls were admitted directly into the joys of Paradise. *Dacherii Specilegium*, vol. iv. p. 257.

THE expence of conducting numerous bodies of men from Europe to Asia, must have been excessive, and the difficulty of raising the necessary sums must have been proportionally great, during ages when the publick revenues in every nation of Europe were extremely small. Some account is preserved of the expedients employed by Humbert II. Dauphin of Vienne, in order to levy the money requisite towards equipping him for the Crusade, A. D. 1346. These I shall mention, as they tend to shew the considerable influence which the Crusades had, both on the state of property and of civil government. 1. He exposed to sale part of his domains; and as the price was destined for such a sacred service, he obtained the consent of the French King, of whom these lands were held, ratifying the alienation. *Hist. de Dauphiné*, tom. i. p. 332. 335.—2. He issued a proclamation, in which he promised to grant new privileges to the nobles, as well as new immunities to the cities and towns, in his territories, in consideration of



certain sums which they were instantly to pay on that account. Ibid. tom. ii. p. 512. Many of the charters of community, which I shall mention in another note, were obtained in this manner — 3. He exacted a contribution towards defraying the charges of the expedition from all his subjects, whether ecclesiasticks or laymen, who did not accompany him in person to the East. Ibid. tom. i. p. 335.—4. He appropriated a considerable part of his usual revenues for the support of the troops to be employed in this service. Ibid. tom. ii. p. 518.—5. He exacted considerable sums not only of the Jews settled in his dominions, but also of the Lombards and other bankers who had fixed their residence there. Ibid. tom. i. p. 338. tom. ii. 528. Notwithstanding the variety of these resources, the Dauphin was involved in such expence by this expedition, that on his return he was obliged to make new demands on his subjects, and to pillage the Jews by fresh exactions. Ibid. tom. i. p. 344. 347. When the count de Foix engaged in the first Crusade, he raised the money necessary for defraying the expences of that expedition, by alienating part of his territories. Hist. de Langued. par D. D. de Vic & Vaisette, tom. ii. p. 287. In like manner Baldwin, count of Hainaut, mortgaged or sold part of his dominions to the bishop of Liege, A. D. 1096. Du Mont Corps Diplomatique, tom. i. p. 59. At a later period, Baldwin, count of Namur, sold part of his estate to a monastery, when he intended to assume the cross, A. D. 1239. Miræi Oper. i. 313.



## NOTE XIV. SECT. I. p. 34. [O].

THE usual method of forming an opinion concerning the comparative state of manners in two different nations, is by attending to the facts which historians relate concerning each of them. Various passages might be selected from the Byzantin historians, describing the splendor and magnificence of the Greek Empire. P. de Montfaucon has produced from the writings of St. Chrysostom a very full account of the elegance and luxury of the Greeks in his age. That father in his sermons enters into such details concerning the manners and customs of his contemporaries, as appear strange in discourses from the pulpit. P. de Montfaucon has collected these descriptions, and ranged them under different heads. The court of the more early Greek Emperors seems to have resembled those of Eastern monarchs, both in magnificence and in corruption of manners. The Emperors in the eleventh century, though inferior in power, did not yield to them in ostentation and splendor. *Memoires de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. xx. p. 197.*—But we may decide concerning the comparative state of manners in the Eastern Empire, and among the nations in the west of Europe, by another method, which, if not more certain, is at least more striking. As Constantinople was the place of rendezvous for all the armies of the crusaders, this brought together the people of the east and west as to one great interview. There are extant several contemporary

temporary authors both among the Greeks and Latins, who were witnesses of this singular congress of people, formerly strangers, in a great measure, to each other. They describe with simplicity and candour, the impression which that new spectacle made upon their own minds. This may be considered as the most lively and just picture of the real character and manners of each people. When the Greeks speak of the Franks, they describe them as barbarians, fierce, illiterate, impetuous, and savage. They assume a tone of superiority, as a more polished people, acquainted with the arts both of government and of elegance, of which the other was ignorant. It is thus Anna Comnena describes the manners of the Latins, *Alexias*, p. 224. 231. 237. ap. *Byz. Script.* vol. xi. She always treats them with contempt as a rude people, the very mention of whose names was sufficient to contaminate the beauty and elegance of history, p. 229. Nicetas Choniatas inveighs against them with still more violence, and gives an account of their ferocity and devastations, in terms not unlike those which preceding historians had employed in describing the incursions of the Goths and Vandals. *Nicet. Chon.* ap. *Byz. Script.* vol. iii. p. 302, &c. But, on the other hand, the Latin historians were struck with astonishment at the magnificence, wealth, and elegance which they discovered in the Eastern Empire. “O what a vast city is Constantinople (exclaims Fulcherius Carnotensis, when he first

beheld it) and how beautiful! How many monasteries are there in it, and how many palaces built with wonderful art! How many manufactures are there in the city amazing to behold! It would be astonishing to relate how it abounds with all good things, with gold, silver, and stuffs of various kinds; for every hour ships arrive in its port laden with all things necessary for the use of man." Fulcher. ap. Bongars. vol. i. p. 386. Willermus Archbishop of Tyre, the most intelligent historian of the crusades, takes frequent occasion to describe the elegance and splendor of the court of Constantinople, and adds, that what they observed there exceeded any idea which they could have formed of it, nostrarum enim rerum modum & dignitatem excedunt, Willerm. Tyr. ap. Bong. vol. ii. p. 657. 664. Benjamin the Jew, of Tudela in Navarre, who began his travels A. D. 1173, appears to have been equally astonished at the magnificence of that city, and gives a description of its splendour, in terms of high admiration. Benj. Tudel. chez les Voyages faits en 12, 13, &c. siècles par Bergeron, p. 10, &c. Guntherus, a French monk, who wrote a history of the conquest of Constantinople by the crusaders in the thirteenth century, speaks of the magnificence of that city in the same tone of admiration, "Structuram autem Ædificiorum in corpore civitatis, in ecclesiis videlicet, & turribus, & in domibus magnatorum, vix ullus vel describere potest, vel credere describenti, nisi qui ea oculata fide cognoverit."

cognoverit." Hist. Constantinop. ap. Canisii Lectiones Antiquas, fol. Antw. 1725. vol. iv. p. 14. Geoffrey de Villehardouin, a nobleman of high rank, and accustomed to all the magnificence then known in the west, describes, in similar terms, the astonishment and admiration of such of his fellow-soldiers who beheld Constantinople for the first time: " They could not have believed, says he, that there was a city so beautiful and rich in the whole world. When they viewed its high walls, its lofty towers, its rich palaces, its superb churches, all appeared so great that they could have formed no conception of this sovereign city, unless they had seen it with their own eyes." Histoire de la Conquete de Constant. p. 49. From these undisguised representations of their own feelings, it is evident, that to the Greeks, the Latins appeared to be a race of rude, unpolished barbarians; whereas the latter, how much soever they might condemn the unwarlike character of the former, could not help regarding them as far superior to themselves in elegance and arts.—That the state of government and manners was much more improved in Italy than in the other countries of Europe is evident not only from the facts recorded in history, but it appears that the more intelligent leaders of the crusaders were struck with the difference. Jacobus de Vitriaco, a French historian of the holy war, makes an elaborate panegyrick on the character and manners of the Italians. He views them as a more polished

people, and particularly celebrates them for their love of liberty, and civil wisdom; “in consiliis circumspecti, in re sua publica procuranda diligentes & studiosi; sibi in posterum providentes; aliis subijci renuentes; ante omnia libertatem sibi defendentes; sub uno quem eligunt capitaneo, communitati suæ jura & instituta dictantes & similiter observantes.” *Histor. Hierosol. ap. Gesta Dei per Francos*, vol. ii. p. 1085.

NOTE XV. SECT. I. p. 38. [P].

THE different steps taken by the cities of Italy in order to extend their power and dominions are remarkable. As soon as their liberties were established, and they began to feel their own importance, they endeavoured to render themselves masters of the territory round their walls. Under the Romans, when cities enjoyed municipal privileges and jurisdiction, the circumjacent lands belonged to each town, and were the property of the community. But as it was not the genius of the feudal policy to encourage cities, or to shew any regard for their possessions and immunities, these lands had been seized, and shared among the conquerors. The barons to whom they were granted, erected their castles almost at the gates of the city, and exercised their jurisdiction there. Under pretence of recovering their ancient property, many of the cities in Italy attacked these troublesome neighbours, and dispossessing them, annexed their territories to the communities, and made

made thereby a considerable addition to their power. Several instances of this occur in the eleventh, and beginning of the twelfth centuries. Murat. antiq. Ital. vol. iv. p. 159, &c. Their ambition increasing together with their power, the cities afterwards attacked several barons situated at a greater distance from them, and obliged these to engage that they should become members of their community; that they should take the oath of fidelity to their magistrates; that they should subject their lands to all burdens and taxes imposed by common consent; that they should defend the community against all its enemies; and that they should reside within the city during a certain specified time in each year. Murat. *ibid.* 163. This subjection of the nobility to the municipal government established in cities, became almost universal, and was often extremely grievous to persons accustomed to consider themselves as independent. Otto Frisingensis thus describes the state of Italy under Frederick I. "The cities so much affect liberty, and are so solicitous to avoid the insolence of power, that almost all of them have thrown off every other authority, and are governed by their own magistrates. Inasmuch that all that country is now filled with free cities, each of which have compelled their bishops to reside within their walls, and there is scarcely any nobleman, how great soever his power may be, who is not subject to the laws and government of some city. De Gestis Frider. I. Imp. lib. ii. c. 13. p. 453. In another place he observes of  
the

the Marquis of Montserrat that he was almost the only Italian baron, who had preserved his independence, and had not become subject to the laws of any city. See also Muratori *Antichita Estensi*, vol. i. p. 411, 412. That state into which some of the nobles were compelled to enter, others embraced from choice. They observed the high degree of security as well as of credit and estimation which the growing wealth and dominion of the great communities procured to all the members of them. They were desirous to partake of these, and to put themselves under such powerful protection. With this view they voluntarily became citizens of the towns to which their lands were most contiguous, and abandoning their ancient castles, took up their residence in the cities at least during part of the year. Several deeds are still extant, by which some of the most illustrious families in Italy are associated as citizens of different cities. Murat. *ib.* p. 165, &c. A charter by which Atto de Macerata is admitted as a citizen of Osimo, A. D. 1198. in the *Marcha di Ancona* is still extant. In this he stipulates, that he will acknowledge himself to be a burges of that community; that he will to the utmost of his power promote its honour and welfare; that he will obey its magistrates; that he will enter into no league with its enemies; that he will reside in the town during two months in every year, or for a longer time if required by the magistrates. The community on the other hand take him, his family and friends, under their protection, and

engage



engage to defend him against every enemy. Fr. Ant. Zacharias *Anecdota medii ævi*. Aug. Taur. 1755. fol. p. 66. This privilege was deemed so important, that not only laymen, but ecclesiasticks of the highest rank, condescended to be adopted as members of the great communities, in hopes of enjoying the safety and dignity which that conferred. Murat. *ib.* 1-9. Before the institution of communities, persons of noble birth had no other residence but their castles. They kept their petty courts there; and the cities were deserted, having hardly any inhabitants but slaves or persons of low condition. But in consequence of the practice which I have mentioned, cities not only became more populous, but were filled with inhabitants of better rank, and a custom which still subsists in Italy was then introduced, that all families of distinction reside more constantly in the great towns, than is usual in other parts of Europe. As cities acquired new consideration and dignity by the accession of such citizens, they became more solicitous to preserve their liberty and independence. The Emperors, as sovereigns, had anciently a palace in almost every great city of Italy; when they visited that country they were accustomed to reside in these, and the troops which accompanied them were quartered in the houses of the citizens. This the citizens deemed both ignominious and dangerous. They could not help considering it as receiving a master and an enemy within their walls. They laboured therefore to get free of this subjection. Some cities prevailed

prevailed on the Emperors to engage that they would never enter their gates, but take up their residence without the walls: Chart. Hen. IV. Murat. ib. p. 24. Others obtained the Imperial licence to pull down the palace situated within their liberties, on condition that they built another in the suburbs for the reception of the Emperor. Chart. Hen. IV. Murat. ib. p. 25. These various encroachments of the Italian cities alarmed the Emperors, and put them on schemes for re-establishing the Imperial jurisdiction over them on its ancient footing. Frederick Barbarossa engaged in this enterprize with great ardour. The free cities of Italy joined together in a general league, and stood on their defence; and after a long contest, carried on with alternate success, a solemn treaty of peace was concluded at Constance, A. D. 1183. by which all the privileges and immunities granted by former Emperors to the principal cities in Italy were confirmed and ratified. Murat. dissert. XLVIII. This treaty of Constance was considered as such an important article in the jurisprudence of the middle ages, that it is usually published together with the *Libri Feudorum* at the end of the *Corpus Juris Civilis*. The treaty secured privileges of great importance to the confederate cities, and though it reserved a considerable degree of authority and jurisdiction to the Empire, yet the cities persevered with such vigour in their efforts in order to extend their immunities, and the conjunctures in which they made them were so favourable, that, before the conclusion  
of

of the thirteenth century, most of the great cities in Italy had shaken off all marks of subjection to the Empire, and were become independent sovereign republics. It is not requisite that I should trace the various steps by which they advanced to this high degree of power so fatal to the Empire, and so beneficial to the cause of liberty in Italy. Muratori, with his usual industry, has collected many original papers which illustrate this curious and little known part of history. Murat. Antiq. Ital. Differt. L. See also Jo. Bapt. Villanovæ hist. Laudis Pompeii sive Lodi in Græv. Thes. Antiq. Ital. vol. iii. p. 888.

NOTE XVI. SECT. I. p. 40. [Q].

LONG before the institution of communities in France, charters of immunity or Franchise were granted to some towns and villages by the Lords on whom they depended. But these are very different from such as became common in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. They did not erect these towns into corporations; they did not establish a municipal government; they did not grant them the privilege of bearing arms. They contained nothing more than a manumission of the inhabitants from the yoke of servitude; an exemption from certain services which were oppressive and ignominious; and the establishment of a fixed tax or rent which they were to pay to their Lord in place of impositions which he could formerly lay upon them at pleasure. Two charters of this kind

kind to two villages in the county of Rouffillon, one A. D. 974, the other A. D. 1025, are still extant. Petr. de Marca *Marca*, five limes Hispanicus. app. p. 909. 1038. Such concessions, it is probable, were not unknown in other parts of Europe, and may be considered as a step towards the more extensive privileges conferred by Louis the Gros on the towns within his domains. The communities in France never aspired to the same independence with those in Italy. They acquired new privileges and immunities, but the right of sovereignty remained entire to the King or baron within whose territories the respective cities were situated, and from whom they receive the charter of their freedom. A great number of these charters granted both by the Kings of France, and by their great vassals, are published by M. D'Achery in his *Specilegium*, and many are found in the collection of the *Ordonnances des Rois de France*. These convey a very striking representation of the wretched condition of cities previous to the institution of communities, when they were subject to the judges appointed by the superior Lords of whom they held, and had scarcely any other law but their will. Each concession in these charters must be considered as a grant of some new privilege which the people did not formerly enjoy, and each regulation as a method of redressing some grievance under which they formerly laboured. The charters of communities contain likewise the first expedients employed for the introduction of equal

equal laws, and regular government. On both these accounts they merit particular attention, and therefore, instead of referring my readers to the many bulky volumes in which they are scattered, I shall give them a view of some of the most important articles in these charters, ranged under two general heads. I. Such as respect personal safety: II. Such as respect the security of property.

I. DURING that state of turbulence and disorder which the corruption of the feudal government introduced into Europe, personal safety was the chief object of every individual; and as the great military barons alone were able to give sufficient protection to their vassals, this was one great source of their power and authority. But, by the institution of communities, effectual provision was made for the safety of individuals independent of the nobles. For, 1. the fundamental article in every charter was, that all the members of it bound themselves by oath to assist, defend, and stand by each other against all aggressors, and that they should not suffer any person to injure, distress, or molest, any of their fellow-citizens. D'Acher. Spicel. x. 642. xi. 341, &c.—2. Whoever resided in any town which was made free, was obliged under a severe penalty to accede to the community, and to take part in the mutual defence of its members. D'Acher. Spic. xi. 344.—3. The communities had the privilege of carrying arms; of making war on their private enemies;

mies; and of executing by military force any sentence which their magistrates pronounced. D'Ach. Spicel. x. 643, 644. xi. 343.—4. The practice of making satisfaction by a pecuniary compensation for murder, assault, or other acts of violence, most inconsistent with the order of society, and the safety of individuals, was abolished; and such as committed these crimes were punished capitally, or with rigour adequate to their guilt. D'Ach. xi. 362. Miræi opera Diplomatica, i. 292.—5. No member of a community was bound to justify or defend himself by battle, or combat; but if he was charged with any crime, he could be convicted only by the evidence of witnesses, and the regular course of legal proceedings. Miræus, *ibid.* D'Ach. xi. 375. 349. Ordon. tom. iii. 265.—6. If any man suspected himself to be in danger from the malice or enmity of another, upon his making oath to that effect before a magistrate, the person suspected was bound under a severe penalty to give security for his peaceable behaviour. D'Ach. xi. 346. This is the same species of security which is still known in Scotland under the name of *Lawburrows*. In France it was first introduced among the inhabitants of communities, and having been found to contribute considerably towards personal safety, it was extended to all the other members of the society. *Etablissèmens de St. Louis*, liv. i. cap. 28. ap. Du Cange *vie de St. Louis*, p. 15.

II. The provisions in the charters of communities concerning the security of property, are not less considerable than those respecting personal safety. By the ancient law of France, no person could be arrested or confined in prison on account of any private debt. *Ordon. des Rois de France*, tom. i. p. 72. 80. If any person was arrested upon any pretext, but his having been guilty of a capital crime, it was lawful to rescue him out of the hands of the officers who had seized him. *Ordon. iii. p. 17.* Freedom from arrest on account of debt, seems likewise to have been enjoyed in other countries. *Gudenus Sylloge Diplom. 473.* In society, while it remained in its rudest and most simple form, debt seems to have been considered as an obligation merely personal. Men had made some progress towards refinement, before creditors acquired a right of seizing the property of their debtors in order to recover payment. The expedients for this purpose were all introduced originally in communities, and we can trace the gradual progress of them. 1. The simplest and most obvious species of security was, that the person who sold any commodity should receive a pledge from him who bought it, which he restored upon receiving payment. Of this custom there are vestiges in several charters of community. *D'Ach. ix. 185. xi. 377.*—2. When no pledge was given, and the debtor became refractory or insolvent, the creditor was allowed to seize his effects with a strong hand, and by his private authority; the citizens of Paris are warranted by the royal mandate, “*ut ubicum-*



que, et quocumque modo poterunt, tantum capiant, unde pecuniam sibi debitam integrè & plenariè habeant, & inde sibi invicem adjutores existant." Ordon. &c. tom. i. p. 6. This rude practice, suitable only to the violence of a state of nature, was tolerated longer than one can conceive to be possible in any society where laws and order were at all known. The ordonance authorizing it was issued A. D. 1134; and that which corrects the law, and prohibits creditors from seizing the effects of their debtors, unless by a warrant from a magistrate, and under his inspection, was not published until the year 1351. Ordon. tom. ii. p. 438. It is probable, however, that men were taught, by observing the disorders which the former mode of proceeding occasioned, to correct it in practice long before a remedy was provided by a law to that effect. Every discerning reader will apply this observation to many other customs and practices which I have mentioned. New customs are not always to be ascribed to the laws which authorize them. These statutes only give a legal sanction to such things as the experience of mankind has previously found to be proper and beneficial.—3. As soon as the interposition of the magistrate became requisite, regular provision was made for attaching or distraining the moveable effects of a debtor; and if his moveables were not sufficient to discharge the debt, his immoveable property, or estate in land, was liable to the same distress, and was sold for the benefit of his creditor. D'Ach. ix. p. 184, 185.

185. xi. p. 348. 380. As this regulation afforded the most complete security to the creditor, it was considered as so severe, that humanity pointed out several limitations in the execution of it. Creditors were prohibited from seizing the wearing apparel of their debtors, their beds, the door of their house, their instruments of husbandry, &c. D'Ach. ix. 184. xi. 377. Upon the same principles, when the power of distraining effects became more general, the horse and arms of a gentleman could not be seized. D'Ach. ix. 185. As hunting was the favourite amusement of martial nobles, the Emperor Lodovicus Pius prohibited the seizing of a hawk on account of any composition or debt. Capitul. lib. iv. § 21. But if the debtor had no other moveables, even these privileged articles might be seized.—4. In order to render the security of property complete within a community, every person who was admitted a member of it, was obliged to buy or build a house, or to purchase lands within its precincts, or at least to bring into the town a considerable portion of his moveables *per quæ justiciari possit, si quid fortè in eum querelæ evenerit*. D'Ach. xi. 326. Ordon. i. 367. Liberates S. Georgii de Esperanchia. Hist. de Dauphine, tom. i. p. 26.—5. That security might be as perfect as possible, in some towns, the members of the community seem to have been bound for each other. D'Ach. x. 644.—6. All questions with respect to property were tried within the community, by magistrates and judges which the citizens elected or appointed. Their decisions were

more equal and fixed than the sentences which depended on the capricious and arbitrary will of a baron, who thought himself superior to all laws. D'Ach. x. 644. 646. xi. 344. & passim. Ordon. iii. 204.—7. No member of a community could be burdened by any arbitrary tax; for the superior lord who granted the charter of community accepted of a fixed census or duty in lieu of all demands. Ordon. t. iii. 204. *Libertates de Calma. Hist. de Dauphine*, tom. i. p. 19. *Libert. St. Georgii de Esperanchia*, *ibid.* p. 26. Nor could the members of a community be distressed by an unequal imposition of the sum to be levied on the community. Regulations are inserted in the charters of some communities concerning the method of determining the quota of any tax to be levied on each inhabitant. D'Ach. xi. 350. 365. St. Louis published an ordonnance concerning this matter which extended to all the communities. Ordon. t. i. 186. These regulations are extremely favourable to liberty, as they vest the power of proportioning the taxes in a certain number of citizens chosen out of each parish, who were bound by solemn oath to decide according to justice.—That the more perfect security of property was one great object of those who instituted communities, we learn, not only from the nature of the thing, but from the express words of several charters, of which I shall only mention that granted by Alienor Queen of England and Duchess of Guienne, to the community of Poitiers, “*ut sua propria melius defendere possint, & magis integrè custodire.*” Du Cange

*voc. Communia*, v. ii. p. 863.—Such are some of the capital regulations established in communities during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. These may be considered as the first rudiments of law and order, and contributed greatly to introduce regular government among all the members of society. As soon as communities were instituted, high sentiments of liberty began to appear. When Humbert, lord of Beaujeu, upon granting a charter of community to the town of Belleville, exacted of the inhabitants an oath of fidelity to himself and successors, they stipulated, on their part, that he should swear to maintain their franchises and liberties; and for their greater security, they obliged him to bring twenty gentlemen to take the same oath, and to be bound together with him. D'Ach. ix. 183. In the same manner the lord of Moirens in Dauphinè produced a certain number of persons as his sureties for the observation of the articles contained in the charter of community to that town. These were bound to surrender themselves prisoners to the inhabitants of Moirens, if their liege lord should violate any of their franchises, and they promised to remain in custody until he should grant them redress. Hist. de Dauphinè, tom. i. p. 17. If the mayor or chief magistrate of a town did any injury to a citizen, he was obliged to give security for his appearance in judgment in the same manner as a private person; and if cast, was liable to the same penalty. D'Ach. ix. 183. These are ideas of equality uncommon in the feudal times. Communities were so favour-

able to freedom, that they were distinguished by the name of *Libertates*. Du Cange, v. ii. p. 863. They were at first extremely odious to the nobles, who foresaw what a check they must prove to their power and domination. Guibert Abbot of Nogent calls them execrable inventions, by which, contrary to law and justice, slaves withdrew themselves from that obedience which they owed to their masters. Du Cange, ib. 862. The zeal with which some of the nobles and powerful ecclesiasticks opposed the establishment of communities, and endeavoured to circumscribe their privileges, was extraordinary. A striking instance of this occurs in the contests between the archbishop of Reims, and the inhabitants of that community. It was the chief business of every archbishop, during a considerable time, to abridge the rights and jurisdiction of the community; and the great object of the citizens, especially when the see was vacant, to maintain, to recover, and to extend their own jurisdiction. *Histoire civile & politique de la ville de Reims* par M. Anquetil. tom. i. p. 287, &c.

THE observations which I have made concerning the state of cities, and the condition of their inhabitants, are confirmed by innumerable passages in the historians and laws of the middle ages. It is not improbable, however, that some cities of the first order were in a better state, and enjoyed a superior degree of liberty. Under the Roman government, the municipal government established in cities was extremely favourable to liberty. The  
jurisdiction

jurisdiction of the senate in each corporation, and the privileges of the citizens, were both extensive. There is reason to believe, that some of the greater cities which escaped the destructive rage of the barbarous nations, still retained their ancient form of government, at least in a great measure. They were governed by a council of citizens, and by magistrates whom they themselves elected. Very strong presumptions in favour of this opinion, are produced by M. l'Abbé De Bos. *Hist. Crit. de la Mon. Franc.* tom. i. p. 18, &c. tom. ii. p. 524. edit. 1742. It appears from some of the charters of community to cities, granted in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, that these only confirm the privileges possessed by the inhabitants previous to the establishment of the community. D'Acher. *Spicileg.* vol. xi. p. 345. Other cities claimed their privileges as having possessed them without interruption from the times of the Romans. *Hist. Crit. de la Mon. Franc.* tom. ii. p. 333. But the number of cities which enjoyed such immunities was so small, as in no degree to diminish the force of my conclusions in the text.

NOTE XVII. SECT. I. p. 40. [R].

HAVING given a full account of the establishment as well as effects of communities in Italy and France, it will be necessary to inquire with some attention into the progress of cities and of municipal government in Germany. The ancient Germans had no cities. Even in their hamlets or vil-

lages they did not build their houses contiguous to each other. Tac. de Mor. Germ. cap. 16. They considered it as a badge of servitude to be obliged to dwell in a city surrounded with walls. When one of their tribes had shaken off the Roman yoke, their countrymen required of them, as an evidence of their having recovered liberty, to demolish the walls of a town which the Romans had built in their country. Even the fiercest animals, said they, lose their spirit and courage when they are confined. Tac. Histor. lib. iv. c. 64. The Romans built several cities of note on the banks of the Rhine. But in all the vast countries from that river to the coasts of the Baltick, there was hardly one city previous to the ninth century of the Christian æra. Conringius Exercitatio de Urbibus Germaniæ, Oper. vol. i. § 25, 27, 31, &c. Heineccius differs from Conringius with respect to this. But even after allowing to his arguments and authorities their utmost force, they prove only that there were a few places in those extensive regions on which some historians have bestowed the name of towns. Elem. Jur. German. lib. i. § 102. Under Charlemagne, and the Emperors of his family, as the political state of Germany began to improve, several cities were founded, and men became accustomed to associate and to live together in one place. Charlemagne founded two archbishopricks and nine bishopricks in the most considerable towns of Germany. Aub. Miræi Opera Diplomatica, vol. i. p. 16. His successors increased the number of these; and as bishops fixed their residence



dence in these cities, and performed religious functions there, that induced many people to settle in them. Conring. *ibid.* § 48. But Henry, surnamed the Fowler, who began his reign A. D. 920, must be considered as the great founder of cities in Germany. The Empire was at that time infested by the incursions of the Hungarians and other barbarous people. In order to oppose them, Henry encouraged his subjects to settle in cities which he surrounded with walls and towers. He enjoined or persuaded a certain proportion of the nobility to fix their residence in the towns, and thus rendered the condition of citizens more honourable than it had been formerly. Wittikindus *Annal.* lib. i. ap. Conring. § 82. From this period the number of cities continued to increase, and they became more populous and more wealthy. But cities were still destitute of municipal liberty or jurisdiction. Such of them as were situated in the Imperial demesnes, were subject to the Emperors. Their *Comites*, *Missi*, and other judges presided in them, and dispensed justice. Towns situated on the estate of a baron, were part of his fief, and he or his officers exercised a similar jurisdiction in them. Conring. *ibid.* § 73, 74. Heinec. *Elem. Jur. Germ.* lib. i. § 104. The Germans borrowed the institution of communities from the Italians. Knipschildius *Tractatus Politico-Histor. Jurid. de Civitatibus Imperialium Juribus*, vol. i. lib. i. cap. 5. N°. 23. Frederick Barbarossa was the first Emperor who, from the same political considera-

tion

tion that influenced Lewis the Gross, multiplied communities in order to abridge the power of the nobles. Pfeffel *Abregè de l'Histoire & du Droit Publique d'Allemagne*, 4to. p. 297. From the reign of Henry the Fowler, to the time when the German cities acquired full possession of their immunities, various circumstances contributed to their increase. The establishment of bishopricks (already mentioned) and the building of cathedrals, naturally induced many people to settle there. It became the custom to hold councils and courts of judicature of every kind, ecclesiastical as well as civil, in cities. In the eleventh century, many slaves were enfranchised, the greater part of which settled in cities. Several mines were discovered and wrought in different provinces, which drew together such a concourse of people, as gave rise to several cities. Conring, § 105. The cities began in the thirteenth century to form leagues for their mutual defence, and for repressing the disorders occasioned by the private wars among the barons, as well as by their exactions. This rendered the condition of the inhabitants of cities more secure than that of any order of men, and allured many to become members of their communities. Conring, § 94. There were inhabitants of three different ranks in the towns of Germany. The nobles, or *familiæ*; the citizens, or *liberi*; and the artisans, who were slaves, or *homines proprii*. Knipschild. lib. ii. cap. 29. N°. 13. Henry V. who began his reign A. D. 1106, enfranchised the slaves who were artisans or inhabitants in several towns,

towns, and gave them the rank of citizens or liberi. Pfeffel, p. 254. Knipsch. lib. ii. c. 29. N<sup>o</sup>. 113. 119. Though the cities in Germany did not acquire liberty so early as those in France, they extended their privileges much farther. All the Imperial and free cities, the number of which is considerable, acquired the full right of being *immediate*; by which term, in the German jurisprudence, we are to understand, that they are subject to the Empire alone, and possess within their own precincts all the rights of complete and independent sovereignty. The various privileges of the Imperial cities, the great guardians of the Germanic liberties, are enumerated by Knipschild, lib. ii. The most important articles are generally known, and it would be improper to enter into any disquisition concerning minute particulars.

#### NOTE XVIII. SECT. I. p. 40. [S].

THE Spanish historians are almost entirely silent concerning the origin and progress of communities in that kingdom; so that I cannot fix with any degree of certainty the time and manner of their first introduction there. It appears, however, from Mariana, vol. ii. p. 221, fol. Hagæ 1736, that in the year 1350, eighteen cities had obtained a seat in the Cortes of Castile. From the account, which shall be given of their constitution and pretensions, Sect. III. of this volume, it is evident that their privileges and form of government were the same with those of the other feudal corporations; and this, as well as the perfect similarity of

of political institutions and transactions in all the feudal kingdoms, may lead us to conclude, that communities were introduced there in the same manner, and probably about the same time, as in the other nations of Europe. In Aragon, as I shall have occasion to observe in a subsequent note, cities seem early to have acquired extensive immunities, together with a share in the legislature. In the year 1118, the citizens of Saragossa had not only attained political liberty, but they were declared to be of equal rank with the nobles of the second class; and many other immunities, unknown to persons in their rank of life in other parts of Europe, were conferred upon them. Zurita *Anales de Aragon*, tom. i. p. 44. In England, the establishment of communities or corporations was posterior to the Conquest. The practice was borrowed from France, and the privileges granted by the crown were perfectly similar to those which I have enumerated. But as this part of history is well known to most of my readers, I shall, without entering into any critical or minute discussion, refer them to authors who have fully illustrated this interesting point in the English history. Brady's *Treatise of Boroughs*. Madox *Firma Burgi*, cap. i. sect. ix. Hume's *History of England*, vol. i. append. i. and ii. It is not improbable that some of the towns in England were formed into corporations under the Saxon Kings, and that the charters granted by the Kings of the Norman race were not charters of enfranchisement from a state of slavery, but a confirma-

tion

tion of privileges which they already enjoyed. See Lord Lyttelton's *History of Henry II.* vol. ii. p. 317. The English cities, however, were very inconsiderable in the twelfth century. A clear proof of this occurs in the history to which I last referred. Fitzstephen, a contemporary author, gives a description of the city of London in the reign of Henry II. and the terms in which he speaks of its trade, its wealth, and the splendour of its inhabitants, would suggest no inadequate idea of its state at present, when it is the greatest and most opulent city of Europe. But all ideas of grandeur and magnificence are merely comparative. It appears from Peter of Blois, archdeacon of London, who flourished in the same reign, and who had good opportunity of being well informed, that this city, of which Fitzstephen gives such a pompous account, contained no more than forty thousand inhabitants. *Ibid.* 315, 316. The other cities were small in proportion, and in no condition to extort any extensive privileges. That the constitution of the boroughs in Scotland, in many circumstances, resembled that of the towns in France and England, is manifest from the *Leges Burgorum* annexed to the *Regiam Majestatem*.

## NOTE XIX. SECT. I. p. 46. [T].

Soon after the introduction of the third estate into the national council, the spirit of liberty, which that excited in France began to produce conspicuous effects. In several provinces of France,

the nobility and communities formed associations, whereby they bound themselves to defend their rights and privileges against the formidable and arbitrary proceedings of the King. The Count de Boulainvilliers has preserved a copy of one of these associations, dated in the year 1314, twelve years after the admission of the deputies from towns into the States General. *Histoire de l'ancien gouvernement de la France*, tom. ii. p. 94. The vigour with which the people asserted and prepared to maintain their rights, obliged their sovereigns to respect them. Six years after this association, Philip the Long issued a writ of summons to the community of Narbonne, in the following terms: " Philip, by the Grace, &c. to our well-beloved, &c. As we desire with all our heart, and above all other things, to govern our kingdom and people in peace and tranquillity, by the help of God; and to reform our said kingdom in so far as it stands in need thereof, for the publick good, and for the benefit of our subjects, who in times past have been aggrieved and oppressed in diverse manners by the malice of fundry persons, as we have learned by common report, as well as by the information of good men worthy of credit, and we having determined in our council which we have called to meet in our good city, &c. to give redress to the utmost of our power, by all ways and means possible, according to reason and justice, and willing that this should be done with solemnity and deliberation by the advice of the prelates,



prelates, barons, and good towns of our realm, and particularly of you, and that it should be transacted agreeably to the will of God, and for the good of our people, therefore we command," &c. Mably, *Observat. ii. App. p. 386*. I shall allow these to be only the formal words of a public and legal style, but the ideas are singular, and much more liberal and enlarged than one could expect in that age. A popular monarch of Great Britain could hardly address himself to parliament, in terms more favourable to publick liberty. There occurs in the History of France a striking instance of the progress which the principles of liberty had made in that kingdom, and of the influence which the deputies of towns had acquired in the States General. During the calamities in which the war with England, and the captivity of King John, had involved France, the States General made a bold effort to extend their own privileges and jurisdiction. The regulations established by the States held A. D. 1355, concerning the mode of levying taxes, the administration of which they vested not in the crown, but in commissioners appointed by the States; concerning the coining of money; concerning the redress of the grievance of purveyance; concerning the regular administration of justice; are much more suitable to the genius of a republican government than that of a feudal monarchy. This curious statute is published, *Ordon. t. iii. p. 19*. Such as have not an opportunity to consult that large



large collection will find an abridgment of it, in *Hist. de France par Villaret*, tom. ix. p. 130. or in *Histoire de Boulainv.* tom. ii. 213. The French historians represent the bishop of Laon, and Marcel Provost of the merchants of Paris, who had the chief direction of this assembly, as seditious tribunes, violent, interested, ambitious, and aiming at innovations subversive of the constitution and government of their country. That may have been the case, but these men possessed the confidence of the people; and the measures which they proposed as the most popular and acceptable, plainly prove that the spirit of liberty had spread wonderfully, and that the ideas which then prevailed in France concerning government were extremely liberal. The States General held at Paris A. D. 1355, consisted of about eight hundred members, and above one half of these were deputies from towns. *M. Secouffe Pref. a Ordon.* tom. iii. p. 48. It appears that in all the different assemblies of the States, held during the reign of John, the representatives of towns had great influence, and in every respect the third State was considered as co-ordinate and equal to either of the other two. *Ibid. passim.* These spirited efforts were made in France long before the House of Commons in England acquired any considerable influence in the legislature. As the feudal system was carried to its utmost height in France sooner than in England, so it began to decline sooner in the former than in the latter kingdom. In England,

land, almost all attempts to establish or to extend the liberty of the people have been successful; in France they have proved unfortunate. What were the accidental events, or political causes, which occasioned this difference, it is not my present business to enquire.

NOTE XX. SECT. I. p. 48. [U].

IN a former Note, N<sup>o</sup> VIII. I have enquired into the condition of that part of the people which was employed in agriculture, and have represented the various hardships and calamities of their situation. When charters of liberty and manumission were granted to such persons, they contained four concessions corresponding to the four capital grievances to which men in a state of servitude are subject. 1. The right of disposing of their persons by sale or grant was relinquished. 2. Power was given to them of conveying their property and effects by will or any other legal deed. Or if they happened to die intestate, it was provided that their property should go to their lawful heirs in the same manner as the property of other persons. 3. The services and taxes which they owed to their superior or liege lord, which were formerly arbitrary and imposed at pleasure, are precisely ascertained. 4. They are allowed the privilege of marrying whatever person they chose, as formerly they could contract no marriage without their lord's permission, and with no person but one of his slaves. All these particulars are found united in the charter granted

Habitatoribus Montis-Britonis, A.D. 1376. Hist de Dauphinè, tom. i. p. 81. Many circumstances concurred with those which I have mentioned in the text in procuring them deliverance from that wretched state. The gentle spirit of the Christian religion; the doctrines which it teaches, concerning the original equality of mankind; its tenets concerning the divine government, and the impartial eye with which the Almighty regards men of every condition, and admits them to a participation of his benefits, are all inconsistent with servitude. But in this, as in many other instances, considerations of interest, and the maxims of false policy, led men to a conduct inconsistent with their principles. They were so sensible, however, of the inconsistency, that to set their fellow Christians at liberty from servitude was deemed an act of piety highly meritorious and acceptable to heaven. The humane spirit of the Christian religion struggled with the maxims and manners of the world, and contributed more than any other circumstance to introduce the practice of manumission. When Pope Gregory the Great, who flourished toward the end of the sixth century, granted liberty to some of his slaves, he gives this reason for it, "*Cum redemptor noster, totius conditor naturæ, ad hoc propitiatus humanam carnem voluerit assumere, ut divinitatis suæ gratia, dirempto (quo tenebamur captivi) vinculo, pristinæ nos restitueret libertati; salubriter agitur, si homines, quos ab initio liberos natura protulit, & jus gentium jugo substituit servitutis, in ea,*

quâ

quâ nati fuerant, manumittentis beneficio libertati reddantur." Gregor. Magn. ap. Potgieff lib. iv. c. i. § 3. Several laws or charters founded on reasons similar to this, are produced by the same author. Accordingly a great part of the charters of manumission previous to the reign of Louis X. are granted pro amore Dei, pro remedio animæ, & pro mercede animæ. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. i. p. 849, 850. Du Cange, voc. *manumissio*. The formality of manumission was executed in a church, as a religious solemnity. The person to be set free was led round the great altar with a torch in his hand, he took hold of the horns of the altar, and there the solemn words conferring liberty were pronounced. Du Cange, Ib. vol. iv. p. 467. I shall transcribe a part of a charter of manumission granted A. D. 1056; both as it contains a full account of the ceremonies used in this form of manumission, and as a specimen of the imperfect knowledge of the Latin tongue in that barbarous age. It is granted by Willa the widow of Hugo the Duke and Marquis, in favour of Clariza one of her slaves. " Et ideo nos Domine Wille inclite cometisse—libera et absolvo te Cleriza filia Uberto—pro timore omnipotentis Dei, & remedio luminarie anime bone memorie quondam supra scripto Domini Ugo gloriosissimo, ut quando illum Dominus de hac vita migrare, jusserit, pars iniqua non abeat potestatem ullam, sed angelus Domini nostri Jesu Christi collocare dignitur illum inter sanctos dilectos suos; & beatus Petrus princeps apostolorum, qui habet potestatem omnium ani-

marum ligandi et absolvendi, ut ipsi absolvat animæ ejus de peccatis fui, & aperiad illum janua paradisi; pro eadem vero rationi, in mano mite te Benzo presbiter, ut vadat tecum in ecclesia sancti Bartholomæi apostoli; traad te tribus vicibus circa altare ipsius ecclesiæ cum cæreo apprehensum in manibus tuis & manibus suis; deinde exite ambulate in via quadrubio, ubi quatuor vie se deviduntur. Statimq; pro remedio luminarie anime bone memorie quondam supra scripto Domini Ugo et ipsi presbiter Benzo fecit omnia, & dixit, Ecce quatuor vie, ite et ambulate in quacunq; partem tibi placuerit, tam sic supra scripta Cleriza, qua nosque tui heredes, qui ab ac hora in antea nati, vel procreati fuerit utriusq; sexus, &c." Murat. ib. p. 853. Many other charters might have been selected, which, in point of grammar or style, are in no wise superior to this. Manumission was frequently granted on death-bed or by latter-will. As the minds of men are at that time awakened to sentiments of humanity and piety, these deeds proceeded from religious motives, and are granted *pro redemptione animæ*, in order to obtain acceptance with God. Du Cange ubi supra, p. 470. & voc. *servus*, vol. vi. p. 451. Another method of obtaining liberty was by entering into holy orders, or taking the vow in a monastery. This was permitted for some time; but so many slaves escaped, by this means, out of the hands of their masters, that the practice was afterwards restrained, and at last prohibited by the laws of almost all the nations of Europe. Murat. ib. p. 842. Con-

formably

formably to the same principles, Princes, on the birth of a son, or upon any other agreeable event, appointed a certain number of slaves to be enfranchised, as a testimony of their gratitude to God for that benefit. Marculfi Form. lib. i. cap. 39. There are several forms of manumission published by Marculfus, and all of them are founded on religious considerations, in order to procure the favour of God, or to obtain the forgiveness of their sins. Lib. ii. c. 23. 33, 34. edit. Baluz. The same observation holds with respect to the other collections of Formulæ annexed to Marculfus. As sentiments of religion induced some to grant liberty to their fellow-Christians who groaned under the yoke of servitude; so mistaken ideas concerning devotion led others to relinquish their liberty. When a person conceived an extraordinary respect for the saint who was the patron of any church or monastery in which he was accustomed to attend religious worship, it was not unusual among men possessed with an excess of superstitious reverence, to give up themselves and their posterity to be the slaves of the saint. Mabillon. de re Diplom. lib. vi. 632. The *oblati* or voluntary slaves of churches or monasteries were very numerous, and may be divided into three different classes. The first were such as put themselves and effects under the protection of a particular church or monastery, binding themselves to defend its privileges and property against every aggressor. These were prompted to



## PROOFS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

do so not merely by devotion, but in order to obtain that security which arose from the protection of the church. They were rather vassals than slaves, and sometimes persons of noble birth found it prudent to secure the protection of the church in this manner. Persons of the second class bound themselves to pay an annual tax or quit-rent out of their estates to a church or monastery. Besides this, they sometimes engaged to perform certain services. They were called *cenfuales*. The last class consisted of such as actually renounced their liberty, and became slaves in the strict and proper sense of the word. These were called *ministeriales*, and enslaved their bodies, as some of the charters bear, that they might procure the liberty of their souls. Potgiesserus de statu fervorum, lib. i. cap. i. § 6, 7. How zealous the clergy were to encourage the opinions which led to this practice will appear from a clause in a charter by which one gives up himself as a slave to a monastery, “Cum sit omni carnali ingenuitate generosius extremum quodcumq; Dei servitium, scilicet quod terrena nobilitas multos plerumq; vitiorum servos facit, servitus vero Christi nobiles virtutibus reddit, nemo autem sani capitis virtutibus vitia comparaverit, claret pro certo eum esse generosiores, qui se Dei servitio præbuerit prouiores. Quod ego Ragnaldus intelligens, &c.” Another author says, “Eligens magis esse servus Dei quam libertus sæculi, firmiter credens & sciens, quod servire Deo, regnare est, summaque ingenuitas sit in qua servitus



fervitus comparabatur Christi, &c." Du Cange, voc. *oblatus*, vol. iv. p. 1286, 1287. It does not appear, that the enfranchisement of slaves was a frequent practice while the feudal system preserved its vigour. On the contrary, there were laws which set bounds to this practice as detrimental to society. Potgiess. lib. iv. c. 2. § 6. The inferior order of men owed the recovery of their liberty to the decline of that aristocratical policy, which lodged the most extensive power in the hands of a few members of the society, and depressed all the rest. When Louis X. issued his ordonance, several slaves had been so long accustomed to servitude, and their minds were so much debased by that unhappy situation, that they refused to accept of the liberty which was offered them. D'Ach. Spicel. vol. xi. p. 387. Long after the reign of Louis X. several of the French nobility continued to assert their ancient dominion over their slaves. It appears from an ordonance of the famous Bertrand de Guesclin Constable of France, that the custom of enfranchising them was considered as a pernicious innovation. Morice Mem. pour servir des preuves à l'hist. de Bret. tom. ii. p. 100. In some instances, when the prædial slaves were declared to be freemen, they were still bound to perform certain services to their ancient masters; and were kept in a state different from other subjects, being restricted either from purchasing land, or becoming members of a community within the precincts of the manor to which

they formerly belonged. Martene & Durand. Thesaur. Anecd. vol. i. p. 914. This, however, seems not to have been common.—There is no general law for the manumission of slaves in the Statute-book of England similar to that which has been quoted from the Ordonances of the Kings of France. Though the genius of the English constitution seems early to have favoured personal liberty, personal servitude, nevertheless, continued long in England in some particular places. In the year 1514, we find a charter of Henry VIII. enfranchising two slaves belonging to one of his manors. Rym. Fœder. vol. xiii. p. 470. As late as the year 1574, there is a commission from Queen Elizabeth with respect to the manumission of certain bondmen belonging to her. Rymer. in Observat. on the statutes, &c. p. 251.

#### NOTE XXI. SECT. I. p. 56. [X].

THERE is no custom in the middle ages more singular than that of private war. It is a right of so great importance, and prevailed so universally, that the regulations concerning it make a considerable figure in the system of laws during the middle ages. M. de Montesquieu, who has unravelled so many intricate points in feudal jurisprudence, and thrown light on so many customs formerly obscure and unintelligible, was not led by his subject to consider this. I shall therefore give a more minute account of the customs and regulations which directed a practice so contrary

to the present ideas of civilized nations concerning government and order. 1. Among the ancient Germans, as well as other nations in a similar state of society, the right of avenging injuries was a private and personal right, exercised by force of arms, without any reference to an umpire, or any appeal to a magistrate for decision. The clearest proofs of this were produced Note VI.

2. This practice subsisted among the barbarous nations after their settlement in the provinces of the Empire which they conquered; and as the causes of dissention among them multiplied, their family feuds and private wars became more frequent. Proofs of this occur in their early historians. Greg. Turon. hist. lib. vii. c. 2. lib. viii. c. 18. lib. x. c. 27. and likewise in the codes of their laws. It was not only allowable for the relations to avenge the injuries of their family, but it was incumbent on them. Thus by the laws of the Angli and Werini, *ad quemcunque hereditas terræ pervenerit, ad illum vestis bellica id est lorica & ultio proximi, & solatio leudis, debet pertinere*, tit. vi. § 5. ap. Lindenbr. Leg. Salic. tit. 63. Leg. Longob. lib. ii. tit. 14. § 10.—

3. None but gentlemen, or persons of noble birth, had the right of private war. All disputes among slaves, villani, the inhabitants of towns, and freemen of inferior condition, were decided in the courts of justice. All disputes between gentlemen and persons of inferior rank were terminated in the same manner. The right of private war supposed nobility of birth, and equality of rank in the

the

the contending parties. Beaumanoir *Coustumes de Beauv.* ch. lix. p. 300. *Ordon. des Rois de France*, tom. ii. 395. § xvii. 508. § xv. &c. The dignified ecclesiasticks likewise claimed and exercised the right of private war; but as it was not altogether decent for them to prosecute quarrels in person, *advocati* or *vidames* were chosen by the several monasteries and bishopricks. These were commonly men of high rank and reputation, who became the protectors of the churches and convents by whom they were elected; espoused their quarrels, and fought their battles; *armis omnia quæ erant ecclesiæ viriliter defendebant, et vigilantè protegebant.* *Brussel Usage des Fiefs*, tom. i. p. 144. *Du Cange*, voc. *advocatus*. On many occasions, the martial ideas to which ecclesiasticks of noble birth were accustomed, made them forget the pacifick spirit of their profession, and led them into the field in person at the head of their vassals, “*flamma, ferro, cæde, possessiones ecclesiarum prælati defendebant.*” *Guido Abbas* ap. *Du Cange*, *Ib.* p. 179.—4. It was not every injury or trespass that gave a gentleman a title to make war upon his adversary. Atrocious acts of violence, insults and affronts publicly committed, were legal and permitted motives for taking arms against the authors of them. Such crimes as are now punished capitally in civilized nations, at that time justified private hostilities. *Beauman.* ch. lix. *Du Cange Dissert.* xxix. sur *Joinville*, p. 331. But though the avenging of injuries was the only motive that could legally authorise a private war,

yet

yet disputes concerning civil property often gave rise to hostilities, and were terminated by the sword. Du Cange Differt. p. 332.—5. All persons present when any quarrel arose, or any act of violence was committed, were included in the war which it occasioned; for it was supposed to be impossible for any man in such a situation to remain neutral, without taking side with one or other of the contending parties. Beauman. p. 300.—6. All the kindred of the two principals in the war were included in it, and obliged to espouse the quarrel of the chieftain with whom they were connected, Du Cange, ib. 332. This was founded on the maxim of the ancient Germans, “*fuscipere tam inimicitias seu patris, seu propinqui, quam amicitias, necesse est*,” a maxim natural to all rude and simple nations, among which the form of society, and political union, strengthen such a sentiment. The method of ascertaining the degree of affinity which obliged a person to take part in the quarrel of a kinsman was curious. While the church prohibited the marriage of persons within the seventh degree of affinity, the vengeance of private war extended as far as this absurd prohibition, and all who had such a remote connection with any of the principals were involved in the calamities of war. But when the church relaxed somewhat of its rigour, and did not extend its prohibition of marrying beyond the fourth degree of affinity, the same restriction took place in the conduct of private war. Beauman. 303. Du Cange Differt. 333.—7. A private war could

could not be carried on between two full brothers, because both have the same common kindred, and consequently neither had any persons bound to stand by him against the other, in the contest; but two brothers of the half blood might wage war, because each of them has a distinct kindred. Beauman. p. 299.—8. The vassals of each principal in any private war were involved in the contest, because by the feudal maxims they were bound to take arms in defence of the chieftain of whom they held, and to assist him in every quarrel. As soon, therefore, as the feudal tenures were introduced, and this artificial connection was established between vassals and the baron of whom they held, vassals came to be considered as in the same state with relations. Beauman. 303.—9. Private wars were very frequent for several centuries. Nothing contributed more to increase those disorders in government, or to encourage such ferocity of manners as reduced the nations of Europe to that wretched state which distinguished the period of history which I am reviewing. Nothing was such an obstacle to the introduction of a regular administration of justice. Nothing could more effectually discourage industry, or retard the progress and cultivation of the arts of peace. Private wars were carried on with all the destructive rage, which is to be dreaded from violent resentment when armed with force, and authorised by law. It appears from the statutes prohibiting or restraining the exercise of private hostilities, that the invasion of the most barbarous enemy could not be more desolating

desolating to a country, or more fatal to its inhabitants, than those intestine wars. Ordon. tom. i. p. 701. tom. ii. p. 395. 408. 507, &c. The contemporary historians describe the excesses committed in prosecution of these quarrels in such terms as excite astonishment and horror. I shall mention only one passage from the history of the Holy War, by Guibert Abbot of Nogent: "*Erat eo tempore maximis ad invicem hostilitatibus, totius Francorum regni facta turbatio; crebra ubiq; latrocinia, viarum obsessio; audiebantur passim, immo fiebant incendia infinita; nullis præter sola & indomita cupiditate existentibus causis extruebantur prælia; & ut brevi totum claudam, quicquid obtutibus cupidorum subjacebat, nusquam attendendo cujus esset, prædæ patebat.*" *Gesta Dei per Francos*, vol. i. p. 482.

HAVING thus collected the chief regulations which custom had established concerning the right and exercise of private war, I shall enumerate in chronological order the various expedients employed to abolish or restrain this fatal custom. 1. The first expedient employed by the civil magistrate in order to set some bounds to the violence of private revenge, was the fixing by law the fine or composition to be paid for each different crime. The injured person was originally the sole judge concerning the nature of the wrong which he had suffered, the degree of vengeance which he should exact, as well as the species of atonement or reparation with which he should rest satisfied. Re-  
sentment



sentment became of course as implacable as it was fierce. It was often a point of honour not to forgive, nor to be reconciled. This made it necessary to fix those compositions which make so great a figure in the laws of barbarous nations. The nature of crimes and offences was estimated by the magistrate, and the sum due to the person offended was ascertained with a minute, and often a whimsical accuracy. Rotharis, the legislator of the Lombards, who reigned about the middle of the seventh century, discovers his intention both in ascertaining the composition to be paid by the offender, and in increasing its value; it is, says he, that the enmity may be extinguished, the prosecution may cease, and peace may be restored. *Leg. Langob. lib. i. tit. 7. § 10.—2.* About the beginning of the ninth century, Charlemagne struck at the root of the evil, and enacted, “That when any person had been guilty of a crime, or had committed an outrage, he should immediately submit to the penance which the church imposed, and offer to pay the composition which the law prescribed; and if the injured person or his kindred should refuse to accept of this, and presume to avenge themselves by force of arms, their lands and properties should be forfeited.” *Capitul. A. D. 802. edit. Baluz. vol. i. 371.—3.* But in this, as well as in other regulations, the genius of Charlemagne advanced before the spirit of his age. The ideas of his contemporaries concerning regular government were too imperfect, and their man-

ners too fierce to submit to this law. Private wars, with all the calamities which they occasioned, became more frequent than ever after the death of that great monarch. His successors were unable to restrain them. The church found it necessary to interpose. The most early of these interpositions now extant, is towards the end of the tenth century. In the year 990, several bishops in the south of France assembled, and published various regulations, in order to set some bounds to the violence and frequency of private wars; if any person within their dioceses should venture to transgress, they ordained that he should be excluded from all Christian privileges during his life, and be denied Christian burial after his death. *Du Mont Corps Diplomatique*, tom. i. p. 41. These, however, were only partial remedies; and therefore a council was held at Limoges, A.D. 994. The bodies of the saints, according to the custom of those ages, were carried thither; and by these sacred relicks men were exhorted to lay down their arms, to extinguish their animosities, and to swear that they would not for the future violate the publick peace by their private hostilities. *Bouquet Recueil des Histor.* vol. x. p. 49. 147. Several other councils issued decrees to the same effect. *Du Cange Differt.* 343.—4. But the authority of councils, how venerable soever in those ages, was not sufficient to abolish a custom which flattered the pride of the nobles, and gratified their favourite passions. The evil grew so intolerable, that it became

came necessary to employ supernatural means for suppressing it. A bishop of Aquitaine, A. D. 1032, pretended that an angel had appeared to him, and brought him a writing from heaven, enjoining men to cease from their hostilities, and to be reconciled to each other. It was during a season of public calamity that he published this revelation. The minds of men were disposed to receive pious impressions; and willing to perform any thing in order to avert the wrath of heaven. A general peace and cessation from hostilities took place, and continued for seven years; and a resolution was formed, that no man should in times to come attack or molest his adversaries during the seasons set apart for celebrating the great festivals of the church, or from the evening of Thursday in each week to the morning of Monday in the week ensuing, the intervening days being considered as particularly holy, our Lord's Passion having happened on one of these days, and his Resurrection on another. A change in the dispositions of men so sudden, and which produced a resolution so unexpected, was considered as miraculous; and the respite from hostilities which followed upon it, was called *The Truce of God*. Glaber. Rodolphus Histo. lib. v. ap. Bouquet. vol. x. p. 59. This, from being a regulation or concert in one kingdom, became a general law in Christendom, and was confirmed by the authority of the Pope, and the violaters were subjected to the penalty of excommunication. Corpus Jur. Canon. Decretal. lib. i. tit. 34. c. 1. Du Cange Glossar. voc. *Treuga*.

An act of the council of Toulujes in Roussillon. A. D. 1041, containing all the stipulations required by the truce of God, is published by Dom de Vic & Dom Vaisette *Hist. de Languedoc*, tom. ii. *Preuves*, p. 206. A cessation from hostilities during three complete days in every week, allowed such a considerable space for the passions of the antagonists to cool, and for the people to enjoy a respite from the calamities of war, as well as to take measures for their own security, that, if this truce of God had been exactly observed, it must have gone far towards putting an end to private wars. This, however, seems not to have been the case, the nobles, disregarding the truce, prosecuted their quarrels without interruption as formerly. *Qua nimirum tempestate, universæ provinciæ adeo devastationis continuæ importunitate inquietantur, ut ne ipsa, pro observatione divinæ pacis, professæ sacramenta custodiantur.* Abbas Uspersensis apud Datt de pace imperii publica, p. 13. N° 35. The violent spirit of the nobility could not be restrained by any engagements. The complaints of this were frequent; and bishops, in order to compel them to renew their vows and promises of ceasing from their private wars, were obliged to enjoin their clergy to suspend the performance of divine service, and the exercise of any religious function within the parishes of such as were refractory and obstinate. *Hist. de Langued.* par D D. de Vic. & Vaisette, tom. ii. *Preuves*, p. 118.—5. The people, eager to obtain relief from their sufferings, called in a second time a pretended revelation to

their aid. Towards the end of the twelfth century, a carpenter in Guienne gave out, that Jesus Christ, together with the blessed Virgin, had appeared to him, and having commanded him to exhort mankind to peace, had given him, as a proof of his mission, an image of the Virgin holding her son in her arms, with this inscription, *Lamb of God, who takest away the sins of the world, give us peace.* This low fanatick addressed himself to an ignorant age, prone to credit what was marvellous. He was received as an inspired messenger of God. Many prelates and barons assembled at Puy, and took an oath, not only to make peace with all their own enemies, but to attack such as refused to lay down their arms, and to be reconciled to their enemies. They formed an association for this purpose, and assumed the honourable name of *the Brotherhood of God.* Robertus de Monte Michael ap. M. de Lauriere Pref. tom. i. Ordon. p. 29. But the influence of this superstitious terror or devotion was not of long continuance.—6. The civil magistrate was obliged to exert his authority in order to check a custom which threatened the dissolution of government. Philip Augustus, as some imagine, or St. Louis, as is more probable, published an ordonance, A. D. 1245, prohibiting any person to commence hostilities against the friends and vassals of his adversary, until forty days after the commission of the crime or offence which gave rise to the quarrel; declaring, that if any man presumed to transgress this statute, he should be considered as guilty of a breach of the publick peace,

peace, and be tried and punished by the judge ordinary as a traitor. Ordon. tom. i. p. 56. This was called *the Royal Truce*, and afforded time for the violence of resentment to subside, as well as leisure for the good offices of such as were willing to compose the difference. The happy effects of this regulation seem to have been considerable, if we may judge from the solicitude of succeeding monarchs to enforce it—7. In order to restrain the exercise of private war still farther, Philip the Fair, towards the close of the same century, A. D. 1296, published an ordinance commanding all private hostilities to cease, while he was engaged in war against the enemies of the state. Ordon. tom. i. p. 328. 390. This regulation, which seems to be almost essential to the existence and preservation of society, was often renewed by his successors, and being enforced by the regal authority, proved a considerable check to the destructive contests of the nobles. Both these regulations, introduced first in France, were adopted by the other nations of Europe.—8. The evil, however, was so inveterate, that it did not yield to all these remedies. No sooner was publick peace established in any kingdom, than the barons renewed their private hostilities. They not only struggled to maintain this pernicious right, but to secure the exercise of it without any restraint. Upon the death of Philip the Fair, the nobles of different provinces in France formed associations, and presented remonstrances to his successor, demanding the repeal of several laws, by which he had abridg-



ed the privileges of their order. Among these, the right of private war is always mentioned as one of the most valuable; and they claim, that the restraint imposed by the truce of God, the royal truce, as well as that arising from the ordinance of the year 1296, should be taken off. In some instances, the two sons of Philip, who mounted the throne successively, eluded their demands; in others, they were obliged to make concessions. *Ordon. tom. i. p. 551. 557. 561. 573.* The ordinances to which I here refer, are of such length that I cannot insert them, but they are extremely curious, and may be peculiarly instructive to an English reader, as they throw considerable light on that period of English history, in which the attempts to circumscribe the regal prerogative were carried on, not by the people struggling for liberty, but by the nobles contending for power. It is not necessary to produce any evidence of the continuance and frequency of private wars under the successors of Philip the Fair.—9. A practice somewhat similar to the royal truce was introduced, in order to strengthen and extend it. Bonds of assurance, or mutual security, were demanded from the parties at variance, by which they obliged themselves to abstain from all hostilities, either during a time mentioned in the bond, or for ever; and became subject to heavy penalties, if they violated this obligation. These bonds were sometimes granted voluntarily, but more frequently exacted by the authority of the civil magistrate. Upon a petition from the party who felt himself weakest, the



the magistrate summoned his adversary to appear in court, and obliged him to give a bond of assurance. If, after that, he committed any farther hostilities, he became subject to all the penalties of treason. This restraint on private war was known in the age of St. Louis. *Etablissements*, liv. i. c. 28. It was frequent in Bretagne; and what is very remarkable, such bonds of assurance were given mutually between vassals and the lord of whom they held. Oliver de Clifton grants one to the Duke of Bretagne, his sovereign. *Morice Mem. pour servir de preuves à l'hist. de Bret.* tom. i. p. 846. ii. p. 371. Many examples of bonds of assurance in other provinces of France are collected by Bruffel. tom. ii. p. 856. The nobles of Burgundy remonstrated against this practice, and obtained exemption from it as an encroachment on the privileges of their order. *Ordon.* tom. i. p. 558. This mode of security was first introduced in cities, and the good effects of it having been felt there, was extended to the nobles. See Note XVI.—10. The calamities occasioned by private wars became at some times so intolerable, that the nobles entered into voluntary associations, binding themselves to refer all matters in dispute, whether concerning civil property, or points of honour, to the determination of the majority of the associates. *Morice Mem. pour servir de preuves à l'hist. de Bret.* tom. ii. p. 728.—11. But all these expedients proving ineffectual, Charles VI. A.D. 1413, issued an ordonnance expressly prohibiting private wars on any pretext whatsoever, with power to the judge

ordinary to compel all persons to comply with this injunction, and to punish such as should prove refractory or disobedient, by imprisoning their persons, seizing their goods, and appointing the officers of justice, *Mangeurs & Gasteurs*, to live at free quarters on their estate. If those who were disobedient to this edict could not be personally arrested, he appointed their friends and vassals to be seized, and detained until they gave surety for keeping the peace; and he abolished all laws, customs, or privileges which might be pleaded in opposition to this ordinance. Ordon. tom. x. p. 138. How slow is the progress of reason and of civil order! Regulations which to us appear so equitable, obvious, and simple, required the efforts of civil and ecclesiastical authority, during several centuries, to introduce and establish them. Even posterior to this period, Louis XI. was obliged to abolish private wars in Dauphiné, by a particular edict, A. D. 1451. Du Cange dissert. p. 348.

THIS note would swell to a disproportional bulk, if I should attempt to inquire with the same minute attention into the progress of this pernicious custom in the other countries of Europe. In England, the ideas of the Saxons concerning personal revenge, the right of private wars, and the composition due to the party offended, seem to have been much the same with those which prevailed on the Continent. The law of Ina *de Vindicantibus*, in the eighth century, Lamb. p. 3; those of Edmund in the tenth century, *de homicidio*, Lamb.

p. 72. & *de inimicitiiis*, p. 76; and those of Edward the Confessor, in the eleventh century, *de temporibus & diebus pacis*, or *Treuga Dei*, Lamb. p. 126, are perfectly similar to the *ordonances* of the French Kings their contemporaries. The laws of Edward, *de pace regis*, are still more explicit than those of the French Monarchs, and, by several provisions in them, discover that a more perfect police was established in England at that period. Lambard. p. 123. fol. vers. Even after the conquest, private wars, and the regulations for preventing them, were not altogether unknown, as appears from Madox *Formulare Anglicanum*, N<sup>o</sup> CXLV. and from the extracts from *Domesday Book*, published by Gale *Scriptores hist. Britan.* p. 759. 777. The well known clause in the form of an English indictment, which, as an aggravation of the criminal's guilt, mentions his having assaulted a person, who was in the peace of God and of the King, seems to be borrowed from the *Treuga* or *Pax Dei* and the *Pax Regis* which I have explained. But after the conquest, the mention of private wars among the nobility, occurs more rarely in the English history, than in that of any other European nation, and no laws concerning them are to be found in the body of their statutes. Such a change in their own manners, and such a variation from those of their neighbours, is remarkable. Is it to be ascribed to the extraordinary power that William the Norman acquired by right of conquest, and transmitted to his successors, which rendered the execution of justice more vigorous and deci-

five, and the jurisdiction of the King's court more extensive than under the Monarchs on the Continent? Or, was it owing to the settlement of the Normans in England, who having never adopted the practice of private war in their own country, abolished it in the kingdom which they conquered? It is asserted in an ordonance of John King of France, that in all times past, persons of every rank in Normandy have been prohibited to wage private war, and the practice has been deemed unlawful. Ordon. tom. ii. p. 407. If this fact were certain, it would go far towards explaining the peculiarity which I have mentioned. But as there are some English Acts of Parliament, which, according to the remark of the learned author of the *Observations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient*, recite falsehoods, it may be added, that this is not peculiar to the laws of that country. Notwithstanding the positive assertion contained in this publick law of France, there is good reason for considering it as a statute which recites a falsehood. This, however, is not the place for discussing that point. It is an inquiry not unworthy the curiosity of an English antiquary.

In Castile, the pernicious practice of private war prevailed, and was authorized by the customs and law of the kingdom. *Leges Tauri*, tit. 76. cum commentario Anton. Gomezii, p. 551. As the Castilian nobles were no less turbulent than powerful, their quarrels and hostilities involved their country

country in many calamities. Innumerable proofs of this occur in Mariana. In Aragon, the right of private revenge was likewise authorized by law; exercised in its full extent, and accompanied with the same unhappy consequences. Hieron. Blanca Comment. de rebus Arag. ap. Schotti. Hispan. illustrat. vol. iii. p. 733. Lex Jacobi I. A. D. 1247. Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Aragon, lib. ix. p. 182. Several confederacies between the Kings of Aragon and their nobles, for the restoring of peace, founded on the truce of God, are still extant. Petr. de Marca. *Marca sive Limes Hispanic.* App. 1303, 1388, 1428. As early as the year 1165, we find a combination of the King and court of Aragon, in order to abolish the right of private war, and to punish those who presumed to claim that privilege. *Anales de Aragon por Zurita*, vol. i. p. 73. But the evil was so inveterate, that as late as A. D. 1519, Charles V. was obliged to publish a law enforcing all former regulations tending to suppress this practice. *Fueros & Observanc.* lib. ix. 183. b.

THE Lombards, and other northern nations who settled in Italy, introduced the same maxims concerning the right of revenge into that country, and these were followed by the same effects. As the progress of the evil was perfectly similar to what happened in France, the expedients employed to check its career, or to extirpate it finally, resembled those which I have enumerated. *Murat. Ant. Ital.* vol. ii. p. 306.

IN Germany the disorders and calamities occasioned by the right of private war were greater and more intolerable than in any other country of Europe. The Imperial authority was so much shaken and enfeebled by the violence of the civil wars, excited by the contests between the Popes and the Emperors of the Franconian and Suabian lines, that not only the nobility but the cities acquired almost independent power, and scorned all subordination and obedience to the laws. The frequency of these *faide* or private wars, are often mentioned in the German Annals, and the fatal effects of them are most pathetically described, Datt, de pace Imper. pub. lib. i. cap. v. n°. 30. & passim. The Germans early adopted the Treuga Dei, which was first established in France. This, however, proved but a temporary and ineffectual remedy. The disorders multiplied so fast, and grew so enormous, that they threatened the dissolution of society, and compelled the Germans to have recourse to the only remedy of the evil, viz. an absolute prohibition of private wars. The Emperor, William, published his edict to this purpose, A. D. 1255, an hundred and sixty years previous to the ordonance of Charles VI. in France. Datt, lib. i. cap. 4. n°. 20. But neither he nor his successors had authority to secure the observance of it. This gave rise to a practice in Germany, which conveys to us a striking idea both of the intolerable calamities occasioned by private wars, and of the feebleness of government during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. The cities



cities and nobles entered into alliances and associations, by which they bound themselves to maintain the public peace, and to make war on such as should violate it. This was the origin of the league of the Rhine, of Suabia, and of many smaller confederacies distinguished by various names. The rise, progress, and beneficial effects of these associations are traced by Datt with great accuracy. Whatever degree of publick peace, or of regular administration was preserved in the Empire from the beginning of the twelfth century to the close of the fifteenth, Germany owes to these leagues. During that period, political order, respect for the laws, together with the equal administration of justice, made considerable progress in Germany. But the final and perpetual abolition of the right of private war was not accomplished until A. D. 1495. The Imperial authority was by that time more firmly established, the ideas of men with respect to government and subordination were become more just. That barbarous and pernicious privilege which the nobles had so long possessed, was declared to be incompatible with the happiness and existence of society. In order to terminate any differences which might arise among the various members of the Germanick body, the Imperial chamber was instituted with supreme jurisdiction, to judge without appeal in every question brought before it. That court has subsisted since that period, forming a very respectable tribunal, of essential importance in the German



man constitution. Datt, lib. iii, iv, v. Pfeffel  
Abregé de l'Histoire du Droit, &c. p. 556.

NOTE XXII. SECT. I. p. 67. [Y].

It would be tedious and of little use to enumerate the various modes of appealing to the justice of God, which superstition introduced during the ages of ignorance. I shall mention only one, because we have an account of it in a placitum or trial in the presence of Charlemagne, from which we may learn the imperfect manner in which justice was administered even during his reign. In the year 775, a contest arose between the bishop of Paris and the abbot of St. Denys, concerning the property of a small abbey. Each of them exhibited deeds and records, in order to prove the right to be in them. Instead of trying the authenticity, or considering the import of these, the point was referred to the *judicium crucis*. Each produced a person, who, during the celebration of mass, stood before the cross with his arms expanded; and he whose representative first became weary, and altered his posture, lost the cause. The person employed by the bishop on this occasion had less strength or less spirit than his adversary, and the question was decided in favour of the abbot. Mabillon de re Diplom. lib. vi. p. 498. If a Prince so enlightened as Charlemagne countenanced such an absurd mode of decision, it is no wonder that other monarchs should

should tolerate it so long. M. de Montesquieu has treated of the trial by judicial combat at considerable length. The two talents which distinguish that illustrious author, industry in tracing all the circumstances of ancient and obscure institutions, and sagacity in penetrating into the causes and principles which contributed to establish them, are equally conspicuous in his observations on this subject. To these I refer the reader, as they contain most of the principles by which I have endeavoured to explain this practice. *De l'Esprit des Loix*, lib. xxviii. It seems to be probable from the remarks of M. de Montesquieu, as well as from the facts produced by Muratori, tom. iii. *Dissert.* xxxviii. that the appeals to the justice of God by the experiments with fire and water, &c. were practised by the people who settled in the different provinces of the Roman Empire, before they had recourse to the judicial combat. The judicial combat, however, was the most ancient mode of terminating any controversy among the barbarous nations in their original settlements. This is evident from Velleius Paterculus, lib. ii. c. 118. who informs us, that all questions which were decided among the Romans by legal trial, were terminated among the Germans by arms. The same thing appears in the ancient laws and customs of the Swedes, quoted by Jo. O. Stiernhöök *de jure Sueonum & Gothorum vetusto*, 4to. *Holmiæ* 1682, lib. i. c. 7. It is probable that when the various tribes which invaded the Empire

pire were converted to Christianity, their ancient custom of allowing judicial combats appeared so glaringly repugnant to the precepts of religion, that, for some time, it was abolished, and by degrees, several circumstances which I have mentioned, led them to resume it.

It seems likewise to be probable from a law quoted by Stiernhök in the treatise which I have mentioned, that the judicial combat was originally permitted, in order to determine points respecting the personal character, or reputation of individuals, and was afterwards extended not only to criminal cases, but to questions concerning property. The words of the law are, "if any man shall say to another these reproachful words, "you are, not a man equal to other men," or, "you have not the heart of a man," and the other shall reply, "I am a man as good as you." Let them meet on the highway. If he who first gave offence appear, and the person offended absent himself, let the latter be deemed worse than he was called; let him not be admitted to give evidence in judgment either for man or woman, and let him not have the privilege of making a testament. If the person offended appear, and he who gave the offence be absent, let him call upon the other thrice with a loud voice, and make a mark upon the earth, and then let him who absented himself be deemed infamous, because he uttered words which he durst not support. If both shall appear properly

properly armed, and the person offended shall fall in the combat, let a half compensation be paid for his death. But if the person who gave the offence shall fall, let it be imputed to his own rashness. The petulance of his tongue hath been fatal to him. Let him lie in the field without any compensation being demanded for his death." *Lex Uplandica ap. Stiern. p. 76.* Martial people were extremely delicate with respect to every thing that affected their reputation as soldiers. By the laws of the Salians, if any man called another a *bare*, or accused him of having left his shield in the field of battle, he was ordained to pay a large fine. *Leg. Sal. tit. xxxii. § 4. 6.* By the law of the Lombards, if any one called another *arga*, i. e. a good for nothing fellow, he might immediately challenge him to combat. *Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. v. § 1.* By the law of the Salians, if one called another *cenitus*, a term of reproach equivalent to *arga*, he was bound to pay a very high fine. *Tit. xxxii. § 1.* Paulus Diaconus relates the violent impression which this reproachful expression made upon one of his countrymen, and the fatal effects with which it was attended. *De gestis Longobard. lib. vi. c. 24.* Thus the ideas concerning the point of honour, which we are apt to consider as a modern refinement, as well as the practice of duelling, to which it gave rise, are derived from the notions of our ancestors, while in a state of society very little improved.

As

As M. de Montesquieu's view of this subject did not lead him to consider every circumstance relative to judicial combats, I shall mention some particular facts necessary for the illustration of what I have said with respect to them. A remarkable instance occurs of the decision of an abstract point of law by combat. A question arose in the tenth century concerning the *right of representation*, which was not then fixed, though now universally established in every part of Europe. "It was a matter of doubt and dispute (saith the historian), whether the sons of a son ought to be reckoned among the children of the family, and succeed equally with their uncles, if their father happened to die while their grandfather was alive. An assembly was called to deliberate on this point, and it was the general opinion that it ought to be remitted to the examination and decision of judges. But the Emperor following a better course, and desirous of dealing honourably with his people and nobles, appointed the matter to be decided by battle between two champions. He who appeared in behalf of the right of children to represent their deceased father was victorious; and it was established, by a perpetual decree, that they should hereafter share in the inheritance together with their uncles." Wittickindus Corbeinsis, lib. Annal. ap. M. de Lauriere Pref. Ordon. vol. i. p. xxxiii. If we can suppose the caprice of folly to lead men to any action more extravagant than this of settling a point in law by combat, it must be that of

referring the truth or falsehood of a religious opinion to be decided in the same manner. To the disgrace of human reason, it has been capable even of this extravagance. A question was agitated in Spain in the eleventh century, whether the Musarabic Liturgy and ritual which had been used in the churches of Spain, or that approved of by the See of Rome, which differed in many particulars from the other, contained the form of worship most acceptable to the Deity. The Spaniards contended zealously for the ritual of their ancestors. The Popes urged them to receive that to which they had given their infallible sanction. A violent contest arose. The nobles proposed to decide the controversy by the sword. The King approved of this method of decision. Two knights in complete armour entered the lists. John Ruys de Matanca, the champion of the Musarabic Liturgy, was victorious. But the Queen and Archbishop of Toledo, who favoured the other form, insisted on having the matter submitted to another trial, and had interest enough to prevail in a request, inconsistent with the laws of combat, which being considered as an appeal to God, the decision ought to have been acquiesced in as final. A great fire was kindled. A copy of each Liturgy was cast into the flames. It was agreed that the book which stood this proof, and remained untouched, should be received in all the churches of Spain. The Musarabic Liturgy triumphed likewise in this trial, and if we may believe Rode-

rigo de Toledo, remained unhurt by the fire, when the other was reduced to ashes. The Queen and Archbishop had power or art sufficient to elude this decision also, and the use of the Musarabic form of devotion was permitted only in certain churches. A determination no less extraordinary than the whole transaction. *Rodr. de Toledo*, quoted by *P. Orleans*, *Hist. de Revol. d'Espagne*, tom. i. p. 217. *Mariana*, lib. i. c. 18. vol. i. p. 378.—A remarkable proof of the general use of trial by combat, and of the prædilection for that mode of decision occurs in the laws of the Lombards. It was a custom in the middle ages, that any person might chuse the law to which he would be subjected; and by the prescriptions of that law he was obliged to regulate his transactions, without being bound to comply with any practice authorized by other codes of law. Persons who had subjected themselves to the Roman law, and adhered to the ancient jurisprudence, as far as any knowledge of it was retained in those ages of ignorance, were exempted from paying any regard to the forms of proceedings established by the laws of the Burgundians, Lombards, and other barbarous people. But the Emperor Otho, in direct contradiction to this received maxim, ordained, "That all persons, under whatever law they lived, even although it were the Roman law, should be bound to conform to the edicts concerning the trial by combat." *Leg. Longob.* lib. ii. tit. 55. § 38. While the judicial combat subsisted,



substituted, proof by charters, contracts, or other deeds, became ineffectual; and even this species of evidence, calculated to render the proceedings of courts certain and decisive, was eluded. When a charter or other instrument was produced by one of the parties, his opponent might challenge it, affirm that it was false and forged, and offer to prove this by combat. *Leg. Longob. ib. § 34.* It is true, that among the reasons enumerated by Beaumanoir, on account of which judges might refuse to permit a trial by combat, one is, "If the point in contest can be clearly proved or ascertained by other evidence." *Const. de Beauv. ch. 63. p. 323.* But that regulation removed the evil only a single step. For the party who suspected that a witness was about to depose in a manner unfavourable to his cause, might accuse him of being suborned, give him the lie, and challenge him to combat; if the witness was vanquished in battle, no other evidence was admitted, and the party by whom he was summoned to appear lost his cause. *Leg. Baivar. tit. 16. § 2. Leg. Burgund. tit. 45. Beauman. ch. 61. p. 315.* The reason given for obliging a witness to accept of a defiance, and to defend himself by combat, is remarkable, and contains the same idea which is still the foundation of what is called the point of honour; "for it is just, that if any one affirms that he perfectly knows the truth of any thing, and offers to give oath upon it, that he should not hesitate to maintain the veracity of his affirmation in combat." *Leg. Burgund. tit. 45.*

THAT the trial by judicial combat was established in every country of Europe, is a fact well known, and requires no proof. That this mode of decision was frequent, appears not only from the codes of ancient laws which established it, but from the earliest writers concerning the practice of law in the different nations of Europe. They treat of this custom at great length; they enumerate the regulations concerning it with minute accuracy; and explain them with much solicitude. It made a capital and extensive article in jurisprudence. There is not any one subject in their system of law which Beaumanoir, Defontaines, or the compilers of the *Affises de Jerusalem* seem to have considered as of greater importance; and none on which they have bestowed so much attention. The same observation will hold with respect to the early authors of other nations. It appears from Madox, that trials of this kind were so frequent in England, that fines, paid on these occasions, made no inconsiderable branch of the King's revenue. *Hist. of the Excheq.* vol. i. p. 349. A very curious account of a judicial combat between Mefire Robert de Beaumanoir, and Mefire Pierre Tournemine, in presence of the duke of Bretagne, A. D. 1385, is published by Morice *Mem. pour servir de preuves à l'hist. de Bretagne*, tom. ii. p. 498. All the formalities observed in such extraordinary proceedings are there described more minutely, than in any ancient monument which I have had an opportunity of considering. Tournemine was accused by Beaumanoir of having murdered

murdered his brother. The former was vanquished, but was saved from being hanged upon the spot, by the generous intercession of his antagonist. A good account of the origin of the laws concerning judicial combat, is published in the history of Pavia, by Bernardo Sacci, lib. ix. c. 8. in Græv. Thes. Antiquit. Ital. vol. iii. 743.

THIS mode of trial was so acceptable, that ecclesiasticks, notwithstanding the prohibitions of the church, were constrained not only to connive at the practice, but to authorize it. A remarkable instance of this is produced by Pasquier Recherches, lib. iv. ch. i. p. 350. The abbot Wittikindus, whose words I have produced in this note, considered the determination of a point in law by combat, as the best and most honourable mode of decision. In the year 978, a judicial combat was fought in the presence of the Emperor Henry. The archbishop Aldebert advised him to terminate a contest which had arisen between two noblemen of his court, by this mode of decision. The vanquished combatant, though a person of high rank, was beheaded on the spot. Chronic. Ditmari Episc. Merseb. chez Bouquet Recueil des Hist. tom. x. p. 121. Questions concerning the property of churches and monasteries, were decided by combat. In the year 961, a controversy concerning the church of St. Medard, whether it belonged to the abbey of Beaulieu, was terminated by judicial combat. Bouquet Recueil des Hist. tom. ix. p. 729. Ibid. p. 612, &c. The Emperor Henry I.

A a 3

declares,

declares, that this law authorizing the practice of judicial combats, was enacted with consent and applause of many faithful bishops. Ibid. p. 231. So remarkably did the martial ideas of those ages prevail over the genius and maxims of the canon law, which in other instances had such credit and authority with ecclesiasticks. A judicial combat was appointed in Spain, by Charles V. A. D. 1522. The combatants fought in the Emperor's presence, and the battle was conducted with all the rites prescribed by the ancient laws of chivalry. The whole transaction is described at great length by Pontus Heuterus *Rer. Austriac. lib. viii. c. 17. p. 205.*

THE last instance which occurs in the history of France, of a judicial combat authorized by the magistrate, was the famous one between M. Jarnac and M. de la Châstaignerie, A. D. 1547. A trial by combat was appointed in England, A. D. 1571, under the inspection of the judges in the court of Common Pleas; and though it was not carried to the same extremity with the former, Queen Elizabeth having interposed her authority, and enjoined the parties to compound the matter, yet in order to preserve their honour, the lists were marked out, and all the forms previous to the combat were observed with much ceremony. *Spelm. Gloss. voc. Campus*, p. 103. In the year 1631, a judicial combat was appointed between Donald Lord Rea, and David Ramsay, Esq; by the authority of the Lord High Constable, and Earl Marshal of England; but that

that quarrel likewise terminated without bloodshed, being accommodated by Charles I. Another instance occurs seven years later. Rushworth in Observations on the Statutes, &c. p. 266.

# NOTE XXIII. SECT. I. p. 74. [Z].

THE text contains the great outlines which mark the course of private and public jurisdiction in the several nations of Europe. I shall here follow more minutely the various steps of this progress, as the matter is curious and important enough to merit this attention. The payment of a fine by way of satisfaction to the person or family injured, was the first device of a rude people, in order to check the career of private resentment, and to extinguish those *faidæ*, or deadly feuds which were prosecuted among them with the utmost violence. This custom may be traced back to the ancient Germans, Tacit. de Morib. Germ. c. 21. and prevailed among other uncivilized nations. Many examples of this are collected by the ingenious and learned author of Historical Law-Tracts, vol. i. p. 41. These fines were ascertained and levied in three different manners. At first they were settled by voluntary agreement between the parties at variance. When their rage began to subside, and they felt the bad effects of their continuing in enmity, they came to terms of concord, and the satisfaction made was called a *composition*, implying that it was fixed by mutual consent. De l'Esprit des

Loix, lib. xxx. c. 19. It is apparent from some of the more ancient codes of laws, that when these were compiled, matters still remained in that simple state. In certain cases, the person who had committed an offence, was left exposed to the resentment of those whom he had injured, until he should recover their favour, quoquo modo potuerit. Lex Frision. tit. 11. § 1. The next mode of levying these fines was by the sentence of arbiters. An arbiter is called in the *Regiam majestatem amicalis compositor*, lib. xi. c. 4. § 10. He could estimate the degree of offence with more impartiality than the parties interested, and determine with greater equity what satisfaction ought to be demanded. It is difficult to bring an authentic proof of a custom previous to the records preserved in any nation of Europe. But one of the *Formulæ Andegavenses* compiled in the sixth century, seems to allude to a transaction carried on not by the authority of a judge, but by the mediation of arbiters. Bouquet *Recueil des Histor.* tom. iv. p. 566. But as an arbiter wanted authority to enforce his decisions, judges were appointed with compulsive power to oblige both parties to acquiesce in their decisions. Previous to this last step, the expedient of paying compositions was an imperfect remedy against the pernicious effects of private resentment. As soon as this important change was introduced, the magistrate, putting himself in place of the person injured, ascertained the composition with which he ought to rest satisfied. Every possible

injury that could occur in the intercourse of human society, was considered and estimated, and the compositions due to the person aggrieved were fixed with such minute attention as discovers, in most cases, amazing discernment and delicacy, in some instances, unaccountable caprice. Besides the composition payable to the private party, a certain sum called a *fredum*, was paid to the King or state, as Tacitus expresses it, or to the *fiscus*, in the language of the barbarous laws. Some authors, blending the refined ideas of modern policy with their reasonings concerning ancient transactions, have imagined that the *fredum* was a compensation due to the community, on account of the violation of the publick peace. But it is manifestly nothing more than the price paid to the magistrate for the protection which he afforded against the violence of resentment. The enacting of this was a considerable step towards improvement in criminal jurisprudence. In some of the more ancient codes of laws, the *freda* are altogether omitted, or so seldom mentioned, that it is evident they were but little known. In the latter codes, the *fredum* is as precisely specified as the composition. In common cases it was equal to the third part of the composition. Capitul. vol. i. p. 52. In some extraordinary cases, where it was more difficult to protect the person who had committed violence, the *fredum* was augmented. Capitul. vol. i. p. 515. These *freda* made a considerable branch in the revenues of the barons; and wherever territorial jurisdiction was granted, the royal judges were prohibited from levying any *freda*. In explaining the  
the



the nature of the *fredum*, I have followed, in a great measure, the opinion of M. de Montesquieu, though I know that several learned antiquaries have taken the word in a different sense. De l'Esprit des Loix, liv. xxx. c. 20, &c. The great object of judges was to compel the one party to give, and the other to accept the satisfaction prescribed. They multiplied regulations to this purpose, and enforced them by grievous penalties. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 9. § 34. Ib. tit. 37. § 1, 2. Capit. vol. i. p. 371. § 22. The person who received a composition was obliged to cease from all farther hostility, and to confirm his reconciliation with the adverse party by an oath. Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 9. § 8. As an additional and more permanent evidence of reconciliation, he was required to grant a bond of security to the person from whom he received a composition, absolving him from all farther prosecution. Marculfus, and the other collectors of ancient writs, have preserved several different forms of such bonds. Marc. lib. xi. § 18. Append. § 23. Form. Sirmondicæ, § 39. The *Letters of Slanes*, known in the law of Scotland, are perfectly similar to these bonds of security. By the letters of Slanes, the heirs and relations of a person who had been murdered, bound themselves, in consideration of an *Affythment* or composition paid to them, to forgive, "pass over, and for ever" forget, and in oblivion inter all rancour, malice, revenge, prejudice, grudge and resentment, that they have or may conceive against the aggressor or his posterity, for the crime which he had committed, and discharge him of all action, civil or criminal,

minal, against him or his estate, for now and ever,  
 System of Stiles by Dallas of St. Martin's, p. 862.  
 In the ancient form of letters of Slanes, the private  
 party not only forgives and forgets, but pardons  
 and grants remission of the crime. This practice,  
 Dallas, reasoning according to the principles of  
 his own age, considers as an encroachment on the  
 rights of sovereignty, as none, says he, could pardon  
 a criminal but the King. Ibid. But in early and  
 rude times, the prosecution, the punishment, and  
 the pardon of criminals, were all deeds of the  
 private person who was injured. Madox has pub-  
 lished two writs, one in the reign of Edward I. the  
 other in the reign of Edward III. by which private  
 persons grant a release or pardon of all trespasses,  
 felonies, robberies, and murders committed. For-  
 mul. Anglican. N<sup>o</sup>. 702. 705. In the last of these  
 instruments, some regard seems to be paid to the  
 rights of the sovereign, for the pardon is granted  
*en quant que en nous est*. Even after the authority  
 of the magistrate is interposed in punishing crimes,  
 the punishment of criminals is long considered  
 chiefly as a gratification to the resentment of the  
 persons who have been injured. In Persia, a mur-  
 derer is still delivered to the relations of the person  
 whom he has slain, who put him to death with their  
 own hands. If they refuse to accept of a sum of  
 money as a compensation, the sovereign, absolute  
 as he is, cannot pardon the murderer. Voyages  
 de Chardin III. p. 417. edit. 1735. 4to. Voyages  
 de Tavernier, liv. v. c. 5. 10. Among the Ara-  
 bians, though one of the first polished people in  
 the East, the same custom still subsists. Descrip-

tion de l'Arabie par M. Nieubuhr, p. 28. By a law in the kingdom of Aragon as late as the year 1564, the punishment of one condemned to death cannot be mitigated but by consent of the parties who have been injured. *Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Aragon*, p. 204. 6.

IF, after all the engagements to cease from enmity which I have mentioned, any person renewed hostilities, and was guilty of any violence, either towards the person from whom he had received a composition, or towards his relations and heirs, this was deemed a most heinous crime, and punished with extraordinary rigour. It was an act of direct rebellion against the authority of the magistrate, and was repressed by the interposition of all his power. *Leg. Longob. lib. i. tit. 9. § 8, 34. Capit. vol. i. p. 371. § 22.* Thus the avenging of injuries was taken out of private hands, a legal composition was established, and peace and amity were restored under the inspection, and by the authority of a judge. It is evident, that at the time when the barbarians settled in the provinces of the Roman Empire, they had fixed judges established among them with compulsive authority. Persons vested with this character are mentioned by the earliest historians. *Du Cange, voc. Judices.* The right of territorial jurisdiction was not altogether an usurpation of the feudal barons. There is good reason to believe, that the powerful leaders who seized different districts of the countries which they conquered, and kept possession of them as *allodial* property, assumed at the same time the right

right of jurisdiction, and exercised it within their own territories. This jurisdiction was supreme, and extended to all causes. The clearest proofs of this are produced by M. Bouquet. *Le Droit public de France éclairci, &c.* tom. i. p. 206, &c. The privilege of judging his own vassals, appears to have been originally a right inherent in every baron who held a fief. As far back as the archives of nations can conduct us with any certainty, we find the jurisdiction and fief united. One of the earliest charters to a layman which I have met with, is that of Ludovicus Pius, A. D. 814. And it contains the right of territorial jurisdiction, in the most express and extensive terms. *Capitul.* vol. ii. p. 1405. There are many charters to churches and monasteries of a more early date, containing grants of similar jurisdiction, and prohibiting any royal judge to enter the territories of those churches or monasteries, or to perform any act of judicial authority there. Bouquet. *Recueil des Hist.* tom. iv. p. 628. 631. 633. tom. v. p. 703. 710. 752. 762. Muratori has published many very ancient charters containing the same immunities. *Antiq. Ital. Differt.* lxx. In most of these deeds, the royal judge is prohibited from exacting the *freda* due to the possessor of territorial jurisdiction, which shews that they constituted a valuable part of the public revenue at that juncture. The expence of obtaining a sentence in a court of justice during the middle ages was so considerable, that this circumstance alone was sufficient to render men unwilling to decide any contest in judicial form. It appears from a charter in the thirteenth century, that

that the baron who had the right of justice, received the fifth part of the value of every subject, the property of which was tried and determined in his court. If, after the commencement of a law-suit, the parties terminated the contest in an amicable manner, or by arbitration, they were nevertheless bound to pay the fifth part of the subject contested to the court before which the suit had been brought. *Hist. de Dauphiné, Geneve, 1722. tom. i. p. 22.* Similar to this is a regulation in the charter of liberty granted to the town of Friburg, A. D. 1120. If two of the citizens shall quarrel, and if one of them shall complain to the superior Lord or to his judge, and after commencing the suit, shall be privately reconciled to his adversary; the judge, if he does not approve of this reconciliation, may compel him to insist in his law-suit; and all who were present at the reconciliation shall forfeit the favour of the superior Lord. *Historia Zaringo Badensis. Auctor. Jo. Dan. Schoepflinus. Carolsr. 1765. 4to. vol. v. p. 55.*

WHAT was the extent of that jurisdiction which those who held fiefs possessed originally, we cannot now determine with certainty. It is evident that, during the disorders which prevailed in every kingdom of Europe, the great vassals took advantage of the feebleness of their Monarchs, and enlarged their jurisdictions to the utmost. As early as the tenth century, the more powerful barons had usurped the right of deciding all causes,

causes, whether civil or criminal. They had acquired the *Highb Justice* as well as the *Low*. Etabl. de St. Louis, lib. i. c. 24, 25. Their sentences were final, and there lay no appeal from them to any superior court. Several striking instances of this are collected by Brussel. *Traité des Fiefs*, liv. iii. c. 11, 12, 13. Not satisfied with this, the more potent barons got their territories erected into *Regalities*, with almost every royal prerogative and jurisdiction. Instances of these were frequent in France. Bruss. ib. In Scotland, where the power of the feudal nobles became exorbitant, they were very numerous. *Historical Law Tracts*, vol. i. tract vi. Even in England, though the authority of the Norman Kings circumscribed the jurisdiction of the barons more than in any feudal kingdom, several counties palatine were erected, into which the King's judges could not enter, and no writ could come in the King's name, until it received the seal of the county palatine. *Spelman. Gloss. voc. Comites Palatini*; *Blackstone's Commentaries on the Laws of England*, vol. iii. p. 78. These lords of regalities had a right to claim or rescue their vassals from the King's judges, if they assumed any jurisdiction over them. Brussel, *ubi supra*. In the law of Scotland this privilege was termed the right of *repledging*; and the frequency of it not only interrupted the course of justice, but gave rise to great disorders in the exercise of it. *Hist. Law Tracts*, ib. The jurisdiction of the counties palatine

palatine was productive of like inconveniencies in England.

THE remedies provided by Princes against the bad effects of these usurpations were various, and gradually applied. Under Charlemagne and his immediate descendants, the regal prerogative still retained great vigour, and the *Duces*, *Comites*, and *Missi Dominici*, the former of whom were ordinary and fixed judges, the latter extraordinary and itinerant judges, in the different provinces of their extensive dominions, exercised a jurisdiction co-ordinate with the barons in some cases, and superior to them in others. Du Cange, voc. *Dux*, *Comites* & *Missi*. Murat. Antiq. Dissert. viii. & ix. But under the feeble race of Monarchs who succeeded them, the authority of the royal judges declined, and the barons usurped that unlimited jurisdiction which has been described. Louis VI. of France attempted to revive the function of the *Missi Dominici* under the title of *Juges des Exempts*, but the barons were become too powerful to bear such an encroachment on their jurisdiction, and he was obliged to desist from employing them, Henaut. Abregé Chron. tom. ii. p. 730. His successors (as has been observed) had recourse to expedients less alarming. The appeal *de defaute de Droit*, or on account of the refusal of justice, was the first which was attended with any considerable effect. According to the maxims of feudal law, if a baron had not as many vassals as enabled him



him to try by their peers, the parties who offered to plead in his court, or if he delayed or refused to proceed in the trial, the cause might be carried, by appeal, to the court of the superior lord of whom the baron held, and tried there. De l'Esprit des Loix, liv. xxviii. c. 28. Du Cange, voc. *defectus Justitiæ*. The number of Peers or assessors in the courts of Barons was frequently very considerable. It appears from a criminal trial in the court of the viscount de Lautrec, A. D. 1299, that upwards of two hundred persons were present, and assisted in the trial, and voted in passing judgment. Hist. de Langued. par D. D. De Vic & Vaisette, tom. iv. Preuves, p. 114. But as the right of jurisdiction had been usurped by many inconsiderable barons, they were often unable to hold courts. This gave frequent occasion to such appeals, and rendered the practice familiar. By degrees, such appeals began to be taken from the courts of the more powerful barons, and it is evident, from a decision recorded by Brussel, that the royal judges were willing to give countenance to any pretext for them. Traité des Fiefs, tom. i. p. 235. 261. This species of appeal had less effect in abridging the jurisdiction of the nobles, than the appeal on account of the injustice of the sentence. When the feudal monarchs were powerful, and their judges possessed extensive authority, such appeals seem to have been frequent. Capitul. vol. i. p. 175. 180; and they were made in a manner suitable to the rudeness of a simple age. The persons aggrieved resorted to the palace of their sovereign, and with outcries and loud

noise called to him for redress. Capitul. lib. iii. c. 59. Chronic. Lawterbergienſe ap. Mencken. Script. German. vol. ii. p. 284. b. In the kingdom of Aragon, the appeals to the *Justiza* or ſupreme judge were taken in ſuch a form as ſuppoſed the appellant to be in immediate danger of death, or of ſome violent outrage; he ruſhed into the preſence of the judge, crying with a loud voice, *Avi, Avi, Fuerza, Fuerza*, thus imploring (as it were) the inſtant interpoſition of that ſupreme judge in order to ſave him. Hier. Blanca Comment. de rebus Aragon. ap. Script. Hiſpanic. Piſtorii, vol. iii. p. 753. The abolition of the trial by combat facilitated the revival of appeals of this kind. The effects of this ſubordination which appeals eſtabliſhed, in introducing attention, equity, and conſiſtency of deciſion into courts of judicature, were ſoon conſpicuous; and almoſt all cauſes of importance were carried to be finally determined in the King's courts. Bruſſel, tom. i. 252. Various circumſtances which contributed towards the introduction and frequency of ſuch appeals are enumerated De l'Efprit de Loix, liv. xxviii. c. 27. Nothing, however, was of ſuch effect as the attention which monarchs gave to the conſtitution and dignity of their courts of juſtice. It was the ancient cuſtom for the feudal monarchs to preſide themſelves in their courts, and to adminiſter juſtice in perſon. Marculf. lib. i. § 25. Murat. Diſſert. xxxi. Charlemagne, whiſt he was dreſſing, uſed to call parties into his preſence, and having heard and conſidered the ſubject of litigation, gave judgment concerning it. Egin-

hartus vita Caroli magni cited by Madox Hist. of Exchequer, vol. i. p. 91. This could not fail of rendering their courts respectable. St. Louis, who encouraged to the utmost the practice of appeals, revived this ancient custom, and administered justice in person with all the ancient simplicity. "I have often seen the saint," says Joinville "sit under the shade of an oak in the wood of Vincennes, when all who had any complaint, freely approached him. At other times he gave orders to spread a carpet in a garden, and seating himself upon it, heard the causes that were brought before him." Hist. de St. Louis, p. 13. edit. 1761. Princes of inferior rank, who possessed the right of justice, sometimes dispensed it in person, and presided in their tribunals. Two instances of this occur with respect to the Dauphines of Vienne. Hist. de Dauphiné, tom. i. p. 18. tom. ii. p. 257. But as Kings and Princes could not decide every cause in person, nor bring them all to be determined in the same court; they appointed *Baillis*, with a right of jurisdiction, in different districts of their kingdom. These possessed powers somewhat similar to those of the ancient *Comites*. It was towards the end of the twelfth century, and beginning of the thirteenth, that this office was first instituted in France, Brussel, liv. ii. c. 35. When the King had a court established in different quarters of his dominions, this invited his subjects to have recourse to it. It was the private interest of the *Baillis*, as well as an object of publick policy, to extend their jurisdiction. They took advantage of every defect in

the rights of the barons, and of every error in their proceedings, to remove causes out of their courts, and to bring them under their own cognizance. There was a distinction in the feudal law, and an extremely ancient one, between the high justice and the low. Capitul. 3. A. D. 812. § 4. A. D. 815. § 3. Etabl. de St. Louis, liv. i. c. 40. Many barons possessed the latter jurisdiction who had no title to the former. The former included the right of trying crimes of every kind, even the highest; the latter was confined to petty trespasses. This furnished endless pretexts for obstructing, restraining, and reviewing the proceedings in the baron courts. Ordon. ii. 457. § 25. 458. § 29.—A regulation of greater importance succeeded the institution of *Baillis*. The King's supreme court or parliament was rendered fixed as to the place, and constant as to the time of its meetings. In France, as well as in the other feudal kingdoms, the King's court of justice was originally ambulatory, followed the person of the monarch, and was held only during some of the great festivals. Philip Augustus, A. D. 1305, rendered it sedentary at Paris, and continued its terms during the greater part of the year. Pasquier Recherches, liv. ii. c. 2 and 3, &c. Ordon. tom. i. p. 366. § 62. He and his successors vested extensive powers in that court; they granted the members of it several privileges and distinctions which it would be tedious to enumerate. Pasquier, ib. Velly hist. de France, tom. vii. p. 307. Persons eminent for integrity and skill in law were appointed judges there. Ib. By degrees the final decision

decision of all causes of importance was brought into the parliament of Paris, and the other parliaments which administered justice in the King's name, in different provinces of the kingdom. This jurisdiction, however, the parliament of Paris acquired very slowly, and the great vassals of the crown made violent efforts in order to obstruct the attempts of this parliament to extend its authority. Towards the close of the thirteenth century, Philip the Fair was obliged to prohibit his parliament from taking cognizance of certain appeals brought into it from the courts of the Count of Bretagne, and to recognize his right of supreme and final jurisdiction. *Memoires pour servir de Preuves à l'Histoire de Bretagne par Morice*, tom. i. p. 1037. 1074. Charles VI. at the end of the following century was obliged to confirm the rights of the Dukes of Bretagne in more ample form. *Ibid.* tom. ii. p. 580, 581. So violent was the opposition of the barons to this right of appeal which they considered as fatal to their privileges and power, that the authors of the *Encyclopedie* have mentioned several instances in which barons put to death, or mutilated such persons as ventured to appeal from the sentences pronounced in their courts, to the parliament of Paris, tom. xii. Art. *Parlement*, p. 25.

THE progress of jurisdiction in the other feudal kingdoms was in a great measure similar to that which we have traced in France. In England, the territorial jurisdiction of the barons was both ancient and extensive. Leg. Edw. Conf. N<sup>o</sup>. 5

and 9. After the Norman conquest it became more strictly feudal; and it is evident from facts recorded in the English history, as well as from the institution of Counties Palatine, which I have already mentioned, that the usurpations of the nobles in England were not inferior to those of their contemporaries on the continent. The same expedients were employed to circumscribe or abolish those dangerous jurisdictions. William the Conqueror established a constant court in the hall of his palace; from which the four courts now entrusted with the administration of justice in England took their rise. Henry II. divided his kingdom into six circuits, and sent itinerant judges to hold their courts in them at stated seasons. Blackstone's Commentaries on the Laws of England, vol. iii. 57. Justices of peace were appointed in every county by subsequent monarchs; to whose jurisdiction the people gradually had recourse in many civil causes. The privileges of the Counties Palatine were gradually limited; with respect to some points they were abolished; and the administration of justice was brought into the King's courts, or before judges of his appointment. The several steps taken for this purpose are enumerated in Dalrymple's History of Feudal Property, chap. vii.

In Scotland the usurpations of the nobility were more exorbitant than in any other feudal kingdom. The progress of their encroachments, and the methods taken by the crown to limit or abolish their territorial and independent jurisdictions, both which I had occasion to consider and explain in  
a former



a former work, differed very little from those of which I have now given the detail. History of Scotland, vol. i. p. 45.

I SHOULD perplex myself and my readers in the labyrinth of German jurisprudence, were I to attempt to delineate the progress of jurisdiction in the Empire, with a minute accuracy. It is sufficient to observe, that the authority which the Aulick council and Imperial chamber now possess, took its rise from the same abuse of territorial jurisdiction, and was acquired in the same manner that the royal courts attained influence in other countries. All the important facts with respect to both these particulars, may be found in Phil. Datt, de pace publica Imperii, lib. iv. The capital articles are pointed out in Pfeffel Abregé de l'Histoire & Droit publique d'Allemagne, p. 556. 581.; and in Traité du Droit publique de l'Empire par M. le Coq. de Villeray. The two last treatises are of great authority, having been composed under the eye of M. Schoepflin of Strasburg, one of the ablest publick lawyers in Germany.

NOTE XXIV. SECT. I. p. 78. [AA].

It is not easy to fix with precision the period at which Ecclesiasticks first began to claim exemption from the civil jurisdiction. It is certain, that during the early and purest ages of the church, they pretended to no such immunity. The au-



thority of the civil magistrate extended to all persons, and to all causes. This fact has not only been clearly established by Protestant authors, but is admitted by many Roman Catholics of eminence, and particularly by the writers in defence of the liberties of the Gallican church. There are several original papers published by Muratori, which shew that, in the ninth and tenth centuries, causes of the greatest importance relating to ecclesiasticks were still determined by civil judges. *Antiq. Ital. vol. v. dissert. lxx.* Proofs of this are produced likewise by M. Houard, *Anciennes Loix des François, &c. vol. i. p. 209.* Ecclesiasticks did not shake off all at once their subjection to civil courts. This privilege, like their other usurpations, was gained slowly, and step by step. This exemption seems at first to have been merely an act of complaisance, flowing from veneration for their character. Thus from a charter of Charlemagne in favour of the church of Mans, A. D. 796, to which M. l'Abbé de Foy refers in his *Notice de Diplomes, tom. i. p. 201*, that monarch directs his judges, if any difference should arise between the administrators of the revenues of that church and any person whatever, not to summon the administrators to appear in *mallo publico*; but first of all to meet with them, and to endeavour to accommodate the difference in an amicable manner. This indulgence was in process of time improved into a legal exemption; which was founded on the same superstitious respect of the laity for the clerical character and function.

A remarkable instance of this occurs in a charter of Frederick Barbarossa, A. D. 1172, to the monastery of Altenburg. He grants them *judicium non tantum sanguinolentis plagæ, sed vitæ & mortis*; he prohibits any of the royal judges from disturbing their jurisdiction; and the reason which he gives for this ample concession is, *nam quorum, ex Dei gratia, ratione divini ministerii onus leve est, & jugum suave; nos penitus nolumus illius oppressiois contumelia, vel manu Laica fatigari.* Mencken. Script. rer. Germ. vol. iii. p. 1067.

It is not necessary for illustrating what is contained in the text, that I should describe the manner in which the code of the canon law was compiled, and shew that the doctrines in it most favourable to the power of the clergy, are founded on ignorance, or supported by fraud and forgery. The reader will find a full account of these in Gerard. Van Mastricht. *Historia Juris Ecclesiastici*, & in *Science de Government* par M. Real, tom. vii. c. 1. & 3. § 2, 3, &c. The history of the progress and extent of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, with an account of the arts which the clergy employed in order to draw causes of every kind into the spiritual courts, is no less curious, and would throw great light upon many of the customs and institutions of the dark ages; but it is likewise foreign from the present subject. Du Cange in his *Glossary*, voc. *Curia Christianitatis*, has collected most of the causes with respect to which the clergy arrogated an exclusive jurisdiction, and  
refers

refers to the authors, or original papers, which confirm his observations. Giannonè in his Civil History of Naples, lib. xix. § 3. has ranged these under proper heads, and scrutinizes the pretensions of the church with his usual boldness and discernment. M. Fleury observes, that the clergy multiplied the pretexts for extending the authority of the spiritual courts, at such a rate, that it was in their power to withdraw every person and every cause from the jurisdiction of the civil magistrate. Hist. Eccles. tom. xix. Disc. Prelim. 16. But how ill-founded soever the jurisdiction of the clergy may be, or whatever might be the abuses to which their manner of exercising it gave rise, the principles and forms of their jurisprudence were far more perfect than that which was known in the civil courts. It is probable that ecclesiasticks never submitted, during any period in the middle ages, to the laws contained in the codes of the barbarous nations, but were governed entirely by the Roman law. They regulated all their transactions by such of its maxims as were preserved by tradition, or were contained in the Theodosian code, and other books extant among them. This we learn from a custom which prevailed universally in those ages. Every person was permitted to chuse among the various codes of laws then in force, that to which he was willing to conform. In any transaction of importance, it was usual for the persons contracting to mention the law to which they submitted, that it might be known how any controversy that should arise between

tween them was to be decided. Innumerable proofs of this occur in the charters of the middle ages. But the clergy considered it as such a valuable privilege of their order to be governed by the Roman law, that when any person entered into holy orders, it was usual for him to renounce the laws to which he had been formerly subject, and to declare that he now submitted to the Roman law. *Constat me Johannem clericum, filium quondam Verandi, qui professus sum, ex natione mea, lege vivere Langobardorum, sed tamen, pro honore ecclesiastico, lege nunc videor vivere Romana. Charta, A. D. 1072. Farulfus presbyter qui professus sum, more sacerdotii mei, lege vivere Romana. Charta, A. D. 1075. Muratori Antichita Estensi. vol. i. p. 78. See likewise Houard Anciennes Loix des François, &c. vol. i. p. 203.*

THE code of the canon law began to be compiled early in the ninth century. *Mem. de l'Acad. des Inscript. tom. xviii. p. 346, &c.* It was above two centuries after that before any collection was made of those customs, which were the rule of judgments in the courts of the barons. Spiritual judges decided, of course, according to written and known laws; Lay judges, left without any fixed guide, were directed by loose traditionary customs. But besides this general advantage of the canon law, its forms and principles were more consonant to reason, and more favourable to the equitable decision of every point in controversy, than those which prevailed in lay courts. It appears from Notes  
XXI.

XXI. and XXII. concerning private wars, and the trial by combat, that the whole spirit of ecclesiastical jurisprudence was adverse to these sanguinary customs which were destructive of justice; and the whole force of ecclesiastical authority was exerted to abolish them, and to substitute trials by law and evidence in their room. Almost all the forms in lay courts which contribute to establish, and continue to preserve order in judicial proceedings, are borrowed from the canon law. Fleury Instit. du droit canon. part iii. c. 6. p. 52. St. Louis in his Etablissementens confirms many of his new regulations concerning property, and the administration of justice, by the authority of the canon law, from which he borrowed them. Thus, for instance, the first hint of attaching moveables for the recovery of a debt, was taken from the canon law. Etabl. liv. ii. c. 21. and 40. And likewise the *cessio bonorum*, by a person who was insolvent. Ibid. In the same manner, he established new regulations with respect to the effects of persons dying intestate, liv. i. c. 89. These and many other salutary regulations, the Canonists borrowed from the Roman law. Many other examples might be produced of more perfect jurisprudence in the canon law than was known in lay courts. For that reason it was deemed an high privilege to be subject to ecclesiastical jurisdiction. Among the many immunities, by which men were allured to engage in the dangerous expeditions for the recovery of the Holy Land, one of the most considerable was the declaring such as took the

Cross

Cross to be subject only to the spiritual courts. See Note XIII. and Du Cange, *voc. crucis privilegia*.

NOTE XXV. SECT. I. p. 80. [BB].

THE rapidity with which the knowledge and study of the Roman law spread over Europe, is amazing. The copy of the Pandects was found at Amalphi, A. D. 1137. Irnerius opened a college of civil law at Bologna a few years after. Giann. Hist. book xi. c. 2. It began to be taught as a part of academical learning in different parts of France before the middle of the century. Vacarius gave lectures on the civil law at Oxford, as early as the year 1147. A regular system of feudal law, formed plainly in imitation of the Roman code, was composed by two Milanese lawyers about the year 1150. Gratian published the code of canon law, with large additions and emendations, about the same time. The earliest collection of those customs, which served as the rules of decision in the courts of justice, is the *Affises de Jerusalem*. They were compiled, as the preamble informs us, in the year 1099, and are called *Jus Consuetudinarium quo regebatur regnum orientale*. Willerm. Tyr. lib. xix. c. 2. But peculiar circumstances gave occasion to this early compilation. The victorious Crusaders settled as a colony in a foreign country, and adventurers from all the different nations of Europe composed this new society. It was necessary on that account to ascertain the laws and customs which were to regulate the transactions of business, and the administration of justice among them. But in no country of Europe



rope was there, at that time, any collection of customs, nor had any attempt been made to render law fixed. The first undertaking of that kind was by Glanville, Lord Chief Justice of England, in his *Tractatus de Legibus & Consuetudinibus Angliæ*, composed about the year 1181. The *Regiam Majestatem* in Scotland, ascribed to David I. seems to be an imitation, and a servile one of Glanville. Several Scottish Antiquaries, under the influence of that pious credulity, which disposes men to assent, without hesitation, to whatever they deem for the honour of their native country, contend zealously that the *Regiam Majestatem* is a production prior to the treatise of Glanville; and have brought themselves to believe that a nation in a superior state of improvement borrowed its laws and institutions, from one considerably less advanced in its political progress. The internal evidence (were it my province to examine it) by which this theory might be refuted, is, in my opinion, decisive. The external circumstances which have seduced Scottish authors into this mistake, have been explained with so much precision and candour by Sir David Dalrymple, in his *Examination of some of the arguments for the high antiquity of Regiam Majestatem*, Edin. 1769, 4to, that it is to be hoped the controversy will not be again revived. Pierre de Fontaines, who tells us that he was the first who had attempted such a work in France, composed his *Conseil*, which contains an account of the customs of the country of Vermandois, in the reign of  
St.



St. Louis, which began A. D. 1226. *Beauma-*  
*noir*, the author of the *Coustumes de Beauvoisis*,  
 lived about the same time. The *Etablissements*  
 of St. Louis, containing a large collection of  
 the customs which prevailed within the royal do-  
 mains, were published by the authority of that  
 monarch. As soon as men became acquainted  
 with the advantages of having written customs and  
 laws to which they could have recourse on every  
 occasion, the method of collecting them became  
 common. Charles VII. of France, by an ordo-  
 nance, A. D. 1453, appointed the customary laws  
 in every province of France to be collected and  
 arranged. Velley and Villaret. *Histoire*, tom. xvi.  
 p. 113. His successor, Louis XI. renewed the  
 injunction. But this salutary undertaking hath  
 never been fully executed, and the French juris-  
 prudence remains more obscure and uncertain than  
 if these prudent regulations of their monarchs had  
 taken effect. A practice was established in the  
 middle ages, which affords the clearest proof that  
 judges, while they had no other rule to direct  
 their decrees but unwritten and traditionary cus-  
 toms, were often at a loss how to find out the facts  
 and principles, according to which they were bound  
 to decide. They were obliged in dubious cases  
 to call a certain number of old men, and to lay  
 the case before them, that they might inform them  
 what was the practice or custom with regard to the  
 point. This was called *Enqueste par tourbe*. Du  
 Cange, voc. *Turba*. The effects of the revival of  
 the Roman jurisprudence have been explained by  
 M. de Montesquieu, liv. xxviii. c. 42. and by Mr.  
 Hume,

Hume, *Hist. of England*, vol. ii. p. 441. I have adopted many of their ideas. Who can pretend to review any subject which such writers have considered, without receiving from them light and information? At the same time I am convinced that the knowledge of the Roman law was not so entirely lost in Europe during the middle ages, as is commonly believed. My subject does not require me to examine this point. Many striking facts with regard to it are collected by Donato Antonio d'Asti Dall' *Uso e autorità della ragione civile nelle provincie dell' Imperio Occidentale*. Nap. 1751. 2 vol. 8vo.

THAT the civil law is intimately connected with the municipal jurisprudence in several countries of Europe, is a fact so well known, that it needs no illustration. Even in England, where the common law is supposed to form a system perfectly distinct from the Roman code, and although such as apply in that country to the study of the common law boast of this distinction with some degree of affectation, it is evident that many of the ideas and maxims of the civil law are incorporated into the English jurisprudence. This is well illustrated by the ingenious and learned author of *Observations on the Statutes*, chiefly the more ancient. 2d edit. p. 66.

NOTE XXVI. SECT. I. p. 82. [CC].

THE whole history of the middle ages makes it evident, that war was the sole profession of gentlemen, and the only object attended to in their education.

education. Even after some change in manners began to take place, and the civil arts of life had acquired some reputation, the ancient ideas with respect to the accomplishments necessary for a person of noble birth, continued long in force. In the *Memoires de Fleuranges*, p. 9, &c. we have an account of the youthful exercises and occupations of Francis I. and they are altogether martial and athletic. That father of letters owed his relish for them, not to education, but to his own good sense, and good taste. The manners of the superior order of ecclesiasticks during the middle ages, furnish the strongest proof that the distinction of professions was hardly known in Europe. The functions and character of the clergy are obviously very different from those of laymen; and among the inferior orders of churchmen, this constituted a distinct character separate from that of other citizens. But the dignified ecclesiasticks, who were frequently of noble birth, were above such a distinction; they retained the idea of what belonged to them as gentlemen, and in spite of the decrees of Popes, or the canons of councils, they bore arms, led their vassals to the field, and fought at their head in battle. Among them the priesthood was scarcely a separate profession; the military accomplishments which they thought essential to them as gentlemen, were cultivated; the theological science, and pacifick virtues suitable to their spiritual function, were neglected and despised.

As soon as the science of law became a laborious study, and the practice of it a separate pro-

feſſion, ſuch as roſe to eminence in it obtained honours formerly appropriated to ſoldiers. Knighthood was the moſt illuſtrious mark of diſtinction during ſeveral ages, and conferred privileges to which rank or birth alone were not entitled. To this high dignity perſons eminent for their knowledge of law were advanced, and by that, were placed on a level with thoſe whom their military talents had rendered conſpicuous. *Miles Juſtitiae*, *Miles Literatus* became common titles. Matthew Paris mentions ſuch knights as early as A. D. 1251. If a judge attained a certain rank in the courts of juſtice, that alone gave him a right to the honour of knighthood. Paſquier Recherches, liv. xi. c. 16. p. 130. Diſſertations hiſtoriques ſur la Chevalerie par Honoré de Sainte Marie, p. 164, &c. A profeſſion that led to offices, which ennobled ſuch as held them, grew into credit, and the people of Europe became accuſtomed to ſee men riſe to eminence by civil as well as military talents.

NOTE XXVII. SECT. I. p. 86. [DD].

THE chief intention of theſe notes, was to bring at once under the view of my readers, ſuch facts and circumſtances as tend to illuſtrate or confirm what is contained in that part of the hiſtory to which they refer. When theſe lay ſcattered in many different authors, and were taken from books not generally known, or which it would be diſagreeable to conſult, I thought it would be of advantage to collect them together. But when every thing neceſſary for the proof or illuſtration of my narrative or reaſoning may be found in any one book

book which is generally known, or deserves to be so, I shall satisfy myself with referring to it. This is the case with respect to Chivalry. Almost every fact which I have mentioned in the text, together with many other curious and instructive particulars concerning this singular institution, may be found in *Memoires sur l'ancienne Chevalerie considerée comme une établissement politique & militaire*, par M. de la Curne de St. Palaye.

NOTE XXVIII. SECT. I. p. 91. [EE].

THE subject of my enquiries does not call me to write a history of the progress of science. The facts and observations which I have produced, are sufficient to illustrate the effects of its progress upon manners and the state of society. While science was altogether extinct in the western parts of Europe, it was cultivated in Constantinople and other parts of the Grecian Empire. But the subtle genius of the Greeks turned almost entirely to theological disputation. The Latins borrowed that spirit from them, and many of the controversies which still occupy, and divide theologians, took their rise among the Greeks, from whom the other Europeans derived a considerable part of their knowledge. See the testimony of *Æneas Sylvius ap. Conringium de antiq. academicis*, p. 43. *Histoire littéraire de France*, tom. vii. p. 113, &c. tom. ix. p. 151, &c. Soon after the Empire of the Caliphs was established in the East, some illustrious princes arose among them, who encouraged science. But when the Arabians turned their

attention to the literature cultivated by the ancient Greeks and Romans, the chaste and correct taste of their works of genius appeared frigid and unanimated to a people of a more warm imagination. It was impossible for them to admire the poets and historians of Athens, or of Rome. But they were sensible of the merit of their philosophers. The operations of the intellect are more fixed and uniform than those of the fancy or taste. Truth makes an impression nearly the same in every place; the ideas of what is beautiful, elegant, or sublime, vary in different climates. The Arabians, though they neglected Homer, translated the most eminent of the Greek philosophers into their own language; and, guided by their precepts and discoveries, applied themselves with great ardour to the study of geometry, astronomy, medicine, dialectics, and metaphysics. In the three former they made considerable and useful improvements, which have contributed not a little to advance those sciences to that high degree of perfection which they have attained. In the two latter, they chose Aristotle for their guide, and refining on the subtle and distinguishing spirit which characterizes his philosophy, they rendered it altogether frivolous or unintelligible. The schools established in the East for teaching and cultivating these sciences, were in high reputation. They communicated their love of science to their countrymen, who conquered Asia and Spain; and the schools instituted there were little inferior in fame to those in the East. Many of the persons who distinguished themselves by their proficiency in science

in



in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, were educated among the Arabians. Bruckerus collects many instances of this, *Histor. Philos.* v. iii. p. 681, &c. Almost all the men eminent for science during several centuries, were instructed in the philosophy of the Arabians. The first knowledge of the Aristotelian philosophy in the middle ages, was acquired by translations of his works out of the Arabick. The Arabian commentators were deemed the most skilful and authentick guides in the study of his system. *Conring. antiq. acad. Diss.* iii. p. 95, &c. *Supplem.* p. 241, &c. *Murat. antiquit. Ital.* vol. iii. p. 932, &c. From them the Schoolmen derived the genius and principles of their philosophy, which contributed so much to retard the progress of true science.

THE establishment of Colleges or Universities is a remarkable æra in literary history. The schools in cathedrals and monasteries confined themselves chiefly to the teaching of grammar. There were only one or two masters employed in that office. But in colleges, professors were appointed to teach all the different parts of science. The course or order of education was fixed. The time that ought to be allotted to the study of each science was ascertained. A regular form of trying the proficiency of students was prescribed; and academical titles and honours were conferred on such as acquitted themselves with approbation. A good account of the origin and nature of these is given by Seb. Bacmeisterus *Antiquitates Rostochienses*, five, *Historia Urbis & Academiae Rostoch.*



ap. Monumenta inedita Rer. Germ. per E. J. de Westphalen, vol. iii. p. 781. Lips. 1743. The first obscure mention of these academical degrees in the University of Paris (from which the other universities in Europe have borrowed most of their customs and institutions) occurs A. D. 1215. Crevier. hist. de l'univ. de Paris, tom. i. p. 296, &c. They were completely established A. D. 1231. lb. 248. It is unnecessary to enumerate the several privileges to which bachelors, masters, and doctors were entitled. One circumstance is sufficient to demonstrate the high degree of estimation in which they were held. Doctors in the different faculties contended with knights for precedence, and the dispute was terminated in many instances by advancing the former to the dignity of knighthood, the high prerogatives of which I have mentioned. It was even asserted, that a doctor had a right to that title without creation. Bartolus taught—doctorem actualiter regentem in jure civili per decennium effici militem ipso facto. Honoré de St. Marie Dissert. p. 165. This was called Chevalerie de lectures, and the persons advanced to that dignity, milites Clerici. These new establishments for education, together with the extraordinary honours conferred on learned men, greatly increased the number of scholars. In the year 1262, there were ten thousand students in the university of Bologna; and it appears from the history of that university, that law was the only science taught in it at that time. In the year 1340, there were thirty thousand in the university

of Oxford. Speed's Chron. ap. Anderson's Chronol. Deduction of Commerce, vol. i. p. 172. In the same century, ten thousand persons voted in a question agitated in the university of Paris; and as graduates alone were admitted to that privilege, the number of students must have been vastly great. Velly Hist. de France, tom. xi. p. 147. There were indeed few universities in Europe at that time; but such a number of students may nevertheless be produced as a proof of the extraordinary ardour with which men turned to the study of science in those ages; it shows likewise that they already began to consider other professions than that of a soldier as honourable and useful.

NOTE XXIX. SECT. I. p. 93. [FF].

THE great variety of subjects which I have endeavoured to illustrate, and the extent of this upon which I now enter, will justify my adopting the words of M. de Montesquieu, when he begins to treat of commerce. "The subject which follows  
" would require to be discussed more at large;  
" but the nature of this work does not permit it.  
" I wish to glide on a tranquil stream; but I am  
" hurried along by a torrent."

MANY proofs occur in history of the little intercourse between nations during the middle ages. Towards the close of the tenth century, Count Bouchard intending to found a monastery at St. Maur des Fosses, near Paris, applied to an abbot

of Clugny in Burgundy, famous for his sanctity, intreating him to conduct the monks thither. The language in which he addressed that holy man is singular: He tells him, that he had undertaken the labour of such a great journey; that he was fatigued with the length of it, therefore hoped to obtain his request, and that his journey into such a distant country should not be in vain. The answer of the abbot is still more extraordinary: He refused to comply with his desire, as it would be extremely fatiguing to go along with him into a strange and unknown region. *Vita Burchardi venerabilis Comitum ap. Bouquet Rec. des Hist. vol. x. p. 351.* Even so late as the beginning of the twelfth century, the monks of Ferrieres in the diocese of Sens did not know that there was such a city as Tournay in Flanders; and the monks of St. Martin of Tournay were equally unacquainted with the situation of Ferrieres. A transaction in which they were both concerned, made it necessary for them to have some intercourse. The mutual interest of both monasteries prompted each to find out the situation of the other. After a long search, which is particularly described, the discovery was made by accident. *Herimannus Abbas de Restauratione St. Martini Tornacensis ap. Dacher. Spicel. vol. xii. p. 400.* The ignorance of the middle ages with respect to the situation and geography of remote countries was still more remarkable. The most ancient geographical chart which now remains as a monument of the state of that science in Europe during the middle  
ages,

ages, is found in a manuscript of the *Chronique de St. Denys*. There the three parts of the earth then known are so represented, that Jerusalem is placed in the middle of the globe, and Alexandria appears to be as near to it as Nazareth. *Mem. de l'Acad. des Belles Lettres*, tom. xvi. p. 185. There seems to have been no inns or houses of entertainment for the reception of travellers during the middle ages. *Murat. Antiq. Ital.* vol. iii. p. 581, &c. This is a proof of the little intercourse which took place between different nations. Among people whose manners are simple, and who are seldom visited by strangers, hospitality is a virtue of the first rank. This duty of hospitality was so necessary in that state of society which took place during the middle ages, that it was not considered as one of those virtues which men may practise or not, according to the temper of their minds, and the generosity of their hearts. Hospitality was enforced by statutes, and such as neglected this duty were liable to punishment. *Quicumque hospiti venienti lectum, aut focum negaverit, trium solidorum inlacione mulctetur*, *Leg. Burgund. tit. xxxviii. § 1.* *Si quis homini aliquo pergenti in itinere mansionem vetaverit sexaginta solidos componat in publico.* *Capitul. lib. vi. § 82.* This increase of the penalty, at a period so long after that in which the laws of the Burgundians were published, and when the state of society was much improved, is very remarkable. Other laws of the same purport are collected by Jo. Fred. Polac. *Systema Jurisprud. Germanicæ*,

manicæ, Lips. 1733. p. 75. The laws of the Slavi were more rigorous than any that he mentions; they ordained, "that the moveables of an inhospitable person should be confiscated, and his house burnt. They were even so solicitous for the entertainment of strangers, that they permitted the landlord to steal for the support of his guest." *Quod noctu furatus fueris, cras appone, hospitibus.* *Rerum Meeleburgicar.* lib. viii. a Mat. Jo. Beehr. Lips. 1751. p. 50. In consequence of these laws, or of that state of society which made it proper to enact them, hospitality abounded while the intercourse among men was inconsiderable, and secured the stranger a kind reception under every roof where he chose to take shelter. This, too, proves clearly, that the intercourse among men was rare, for as soon as this increased, what was a pleasure became a burden, and the entertaining of travellers was converted into a branch of commerce.

BUT the laws of the middle ages afford a proof still more convincing of the small intercourse between different nations. The genius of the Feudal system, as well as the spirit of jealousy which always accompanies ignorance, concurred in discouraging strangers from settling in any country. If a person removed from one province in a kingdom to another, he was bound within a year and day to acknowledge himself the vassal of the baron in whose estate he settled; if he neglected

to do so, he became liable to a penalty; and if at his death he neglected to leave a certain legacy to the baron within whose territory he resided, all his goods were confiscated. The hardships imposed on foreigners settling in a strange country, were still more intolerable. In more early times, the superior lord of any territory in which a foreigner settled, might seize his person, and reduce him to servitude. Very striking instances of this occur in the history of the middle ages. The cruel depredations of the Normans in the ninth century, obliged many inhabitants of the maritime provinces of France to fly into the interior parts of the kingdom. But instead of being received with that humanity to which their wretched condition entitled them, they were reduced to a state of servitude. Both the civil and ecclesiastical powers found it necessary to interpose, in order to put a stop to this barbarous practice. Potgiesser. *de Statu Servor.* lib. i. c. 1. § 16. In other countries, the laws permitted the inhabitants of the maritime provinces to reduce such as were shipwrecked on their coast to servitude. *Ibid.* § 17. This barbarous custom prevailed in many countries of Europe. The practice of seizing the goods of persons who had been shipwrecked, and of confiscating them as the property of the lord on whose manor they were thrown, seems to have been universal. *De Westphalen Monum. inedita Rer. Germ.* vol. iv. p. 907, &c. et *Du Cange*, voc. *Laganum*, *Beehr.* *Rer. Meeleb.* lib. p. 512. Among the ancient Welsh, three sorts of persons, a mad-

man,



man, a stranger, and a leper, might be killed with impunity. Leges Hoel Dda, quoted in Observat. on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, p. 22. M. de Lauriere produces several ancient deeds which prove that in different provinces of France, strangers became the slaves of the lord on whose lands they settled. Glossaire du Droit François, Art. *Aubaine*, p. 92. Beaumanoir says, "that there are several places in France, in which if a stranger fixes his residence for a year and day, he becomes the slave of the lord of the manor." Coust. de Beauv. ch. 45. p. 254. As a practice so contrary to humanity could not subsist, the superior lords found it necessary to rest satisfied with levying certain annual taxes from aliens, or imposing upon them some extraordinary duties or services. But when any stranger died, he could not convey his effects by will; and all his real as well as personal estate fell to the King, or to the lord of the barony, to the exclusion of his natural heirs. This is termed in France Droit d'Aubaine. Pref. de Laurier. Ordon. tom. i. p. 15. Brussel. tom. ii. p. 944. Du Cange, voc. *Albani*. Pasquier Recherches, p. 367. This practice of confiscating the effects of strangers upon their death was very ancient. It is mentioned, though very obscurely, in a law of Charlemagne, A. D. 813. Capitul. Baluz. p. 507. § 5. Not only persons who were born in a foreign country were subject to the Droit d'Aubaine, but in some countries such as removed from one diocese to another, or from the lands of one baron to another. Brussel. vol. ii.



p. 947. 949. It is hardly possible to conceive any law more unfavourable to the intercourse between nations. Something similar to it, however, may be found in the ancient laws of every kingdom in Europe. With respect to Italy, see Murat. Ant. vol. ii. p. 14. It is no small disgrace to the French jurisprudence, that this barbarous, inhospitable custom should still remain in a nation so highly civilized.

THE confusion and outrage which abounded under a feeble form of government, incapable of framing or executing salutary laws, rendered the communication between the different provinces of the same kingdom extremely dangerous. It appears from a letter of Lupus, abbot of Ferrières, in the ninth century, that the highways were so much infested by banditti, that it was necessary for travellers to form themselves into companies or caravans, that they might be safe from the assaults of robbers. Bouquet Recueil des Hist. vol. vii. p. 515. The numerous regulations published by Charles the Bald in the same century, discover the frequency of these disorders; and such acts of violence were become so common, that by many they were hardly considered as criminal. For this reason the inferior judges called Centenarii were required to take an oath, that they would neither commit any robbery themselves, nor protect such as were guilty of that crime. Capitul. edit. Baluz. vol. ii. p. 63. 68. The historians of the ninth and tenth centuries give

give pathetic descriptions of these disorders. Some remarkable passages to this purpose are collected by Mat. Jo. Beerh. *Rer. Meeleb. lib. viii. p. 603.* They became so frequent and audacious, that the authority of the civil magistrate was unable to repress them. The ecclesiastical jurisdiction was called in to aid it. Councils were held with great solemnity, the bodies of the saints were brought thither, and in presence of their sacred reliques, anathemas were denounced against robbers, and other violators of the publick peace. Bouquet *Recueil des Hist. tom. x. p. 360. 431. 536.* One of these forms of excommunication issued A. D. 988, is still preserved, and is so singular, and composed with eloquence of such a peculiar kind, that it will not perhaps be deemed unworthy of a place here. After the usual introduction, and mentioning the outrage which gave occasion to the anathema, it runs thus; “*Obtenebrescant oculi vestri, qui concupiverunt; arefcent manus, quæ rapuerunt, debilitentur omnia membra, quæ adjuverunt. Semper laboretis, nec requiem inveniatis, fructuque vestri laboris privemini. Formidetis, & paveatis, à facie persequentis, & non persequentis hostis, ut tabescendo deficiatis. Sit portio vestra cum Juda traditore Domini, in terra mortis et tenebrarum; donec corda vestra ad satisfactionem plenam convertantur.*—*Ne cessent a vobis hæ maledictiones, scelerum vestrorum persecutrices, quamdiu permanebitis in peccato pervasionis. Amen, Fiat, Fiat.*” Bouquet, *Ib. p. 517.*

## NOTE XXX. SECT. I. p. 98. [GG].

WITH respect to the progress of commerce which I have described, p. 93, &c. it may be observed that the Italian states carried on some commerce with the cities of the Greek empire, as early as the age of Charlemagne, and imported into their own country the rich commodities of the east. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. ii. p. 882. In the tenth century, the Venetians had opened a trade with Alexandria in Egypt. Ibid. The inhabitants of Amalphi and Pifa had likewise extended their trade to the same ports. Murat. Ib. p. 884, 885. The effects of the Crusades in increasing the wealth and commerce of the Italian states, and particularly that which they carried on with the East, I have explained, page 34th of this volume. They not only imported the Indian commodities from the East, but established manufactures of curious fabrick in their own country. Several of these are enumerated by Muratori in his Dissertations concerning the *arts* and the *weaving* of the middle ages. Antiq. Ital. vol. ii. p. 349. 399. They made great progress, particularly in the manufacture of silk, which had long been peculiar to the eastern provinces of Asia. Silk stuffs were of such high price in ancient Rome, that only a few persons of the first rank were able to purchase them. Under Aurelian, A. D. 270, a pound of silk was equal in value to a pound of gold. Absit ut auro fila pensentur. Libra enim auri tunc libra serici fuit. Vopiscus in Aureliano. Justinian,

Justinian, in the sixth century, introduced the art of rearing silk-worms into Greece, which rendered the commodity somewhat more plentiful, though still it was of such great value, as to remain an article of luxury or magnificence, reserved only for persons of the first order, or for publick solemnities. Roger I. King of Sicily, about the year 1130, carried off a number of artificers in the silk trade from Athens, and settling them in Palermo, introduced the culture of silk into his kingdom, from which it was communicated to other parts of Italy. Gianon. Hist. of Naples, b. xi. c. 7. This seems to have rendered silk so common, that about the middle of the fourteenth century, a thousand citizens of Genoa appeared in one procession clad in silk robes. Sugar is likewise a production of the East. Some plants of the sugar-cane were brought from Asia; and the first attempt to cultivate them in Sicily was made about the middle of the twelfth century. From thence they were transplanted into the southern provinces of Spain. From Spain they were carried to the Canary and Madeira isles, and at length into the new world. Ludovico Guicciardini, in enumerating the goods imported into Antwerp, about the year 1500, mentions the sugar which they received from Spain and Portugal as a considerable article. He describes that as the product of the Madeira and Canary islands. Descritt. de Paesi Bassi, p. 180, 181. The sugar-cane was introduced into the West-Indies before that time, but the cultivation of it was  
not

not so considerable as to furnish an article in commerce. In the middle ages, though sugar was not raised in such quantities, or employed for so many purposes, as to become one of the common necessities of life, it appears to have been a considerable article in the commerce of the Italian states.

THESE various commodities with which the Italians furnished the other nations of Europe, procured them a favourable reception in every kingdom. They were established in France in the thirteenth century with most extensive immunities. They not only obtained every indulgence favourable to their commerce, but personal rights and privileges were granted to them, which the natives of the kingdom did not enjoy. Ordon. tom. iv. p. 668. By a special proviso, they were exempted from the droit d'aubaine. Ibid. p. 670. As the Lombards engrossed the trade of every kingdom in which they settled, they became masters of its cash. Money of course was in their hands not only a sign of the value of their commodities, but became an object of commerce itself. They dealt largely as bankers. In an ordonnance, A. D. 1295, we find them stiled *mercatores* and *campsores*. They carried on this as well as other branches of their commerce with somewhat of that rapacious spirit which is natural to monopolizers who are not restrained by the concurrence of rivals. An absurd opinion, which prevailed in the middle ages, was, however, in some measure, the cause of their exorbitant demands, and may be pleaded in apology

for them. Commerce cannot be carried on with advantage, unless the persons who lend a sum are allowed a certain premium for the use of their money, as a compensation for the risk which they run in permitting another to traffick with their stock. This premium is fixed by law in all commercial countries, and is called the legal interest of money. But the Fathers of the church preposterously applied the prohibitions of usury in scripture to the payment of legal interest, and condemned it as a sin. The schoolmen, misled by Aristotle, whose sentiments they followed implicitly, and without examination, adopted the same error, and enforced it. Blackstone's Commentaries on the laws of England, vol. ii. p. 455. Thus the Lombards found themselves engaged in a traffick which was deemed criminal and odious. They were liable to punishment if detected. They were not satisfied, therefore, with that moderate premium, which they might have claimed if their trade had been open and authorized by law. They exacted a sum proportional to the danger and infamy of a discovery. Accordingly, we find that it was usual for them to demand twenty per cent. for the use of money in the thirteenth century. Murat. Antiq. Ital. vol. i. p. 893. About the beginning of that century, the Countess of Flanders was obliged to borrow money in order to pay her husband's ransom. She procured the sum requisite, either from Italian merchants or from Jews. The lowest interest which she paid to them was above twenty per cent. and some of  
them

them exacted near thirty. Martene and Durand. Thesaur. Anecdotorum, vol. i. p. 886. In the fourteenth century, A. D. 1311, Philip IV. fixed the interest which might be legally exacted in the fairs of Champagne at twenty per cent. Ordonan. tom. i. p. 484. The interest of money in Aragon was somewhat lower. James I. A. D. 1242, fixed it by law at eighteen per cent. Petr. de Marca. *Marca sine Limes Hispan.* app. 1433. As late as the year 1490, it appears that the interest of money in Placentia, was at the rate of forty per cent. This is the more extraordinary, because at that time the commerce of the Italian States was become considerable. *Memorie Storiche de Piacenza*, tom. viii. p. 104. Piac. 1760. It appears from Lud. Guicciardini, that Charles V. had fixed the rate of interest in his dominions in the Low-Countries at twelve per cent. and at the time when he wrote about the year 1560, it was not uncommon to exact more than that sum. He complains of this as exorbitant, and points out its bad effects both on agriculture and commerce. *Descritt. di Paesi Bassi*, p. 172. This high interest of money, is alone a proof that the profits on commerce were exorbitant.—The Lombards were likewise established in England in the thirteenth century, and a considerable street in the city of London still bears their name. They enjoyed great privileges, and carried on an extensive commerce, particularly as bankers. See Anderson's *Chronol. Deduction*, vol. i. p. 137. 160. 204. 231. where the statutes or other authorities which confirm this are quoted.



But the chief mart for Italian commodities was at Bruges. Navigation was then so imperfect, that a voyage between the Baltick and Mediterranean could not be performed in one summer. For that reason, a magazine or storehouse half-way between the commercial cities in the north, and those in Italy, became necessary. Bruges was pitched upon as the most convenient station. That choice introduced vast wealth into the Low-Countries. Bruges was at once the staple for English wool; for the woollen and linen manufactures of the Netherlands; for the naval stores, and other bulky commodities of the North; and for the Indian commodities, as well as domestick productions imported by the Italian States. The extent of its commerce in Indian goods with Venice alone, appears from one fact. In the year 1318, five Venetian galeasses laden with Indian commodities arrived at Bruges, in order to dispose of their cargoes at the fair. These galeasses were vessels of very considerable burden. *L. Guic. Descritt. di Paesi Bassi*, p. 174. Bruges was the greatest emporium in all Europe. Many proofs of this occur in the historians and records of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. But instead of multiplying quotations, I shall refer my readers to *Anderson*, vol. i. p. 12. 137. 213. 246, &c. The nature of this work prevents me from entering into any long details, but there are some detached facts, which give an high idea of the wealth both of the Flemish and Italian commercial states. The Duke of Brabant contracted his daughter to the Black Prince,

Prince, son of Edward III. of England, A. D. 1339, and gave her a portion which would amount to three hundred thousand pounds of our present money. Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. v. p. 113. John Galeazzo Visconti Duke of Milan concluded a treaty of marriage between his daughter and Lionel Duke of Clarence, Edward's third son, A. D. 1367, and granted her a portion equal to two hundred thousand pounds of our present money. Rymer *Fœder.* vol. vi. p. 547. These exorbitant sums so far exceeding what was then granted by the most powerful monarchs, and which appear extraordinary even in the present age, when the wealth of Europe is so much increased, must have arisen from the riches which flowed into these countries from their extensive and lucrative commerce. The first source of wealth to the towns situated on the Baltic sea, seems to have been the herring-fishery; the shoals of herrings frequenting at that time the coasts of Sweden and Denmark, in the same manner as they now resort to the British coasts. The effects of this fishery are thus described by an author of the thirteenth century. The Danes, says he, who were formerly clad in the poor garb of sailors, are now clothed in scarlet, purple, and fine linen. For they abound with wealth flowing from their annual fishery on the coast of Schonen; so that all nations resort to them, bringing their gold, silver, and precious commodities, that they may purchase herrings, which the divine bounty bestows upon them. Arnoldus Lubecensis ap. Conring. de Urbib. German. § 87.

## PROOFS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

THE Hanseatic league is the most powerful commercial confederacy known in history. Its origin towards the close of the twelfth century, and the objects of its union, are described by Knipschildt *Tractatus Historico-Politico Juridicus de Juribus Civitat. Imper. lib. i. cap. 4.* Anderson has mentioned the chief facts with respect to their commercial progress, the extent of the privileges which they obtained in different countries, their successful wars with several monarchs, as well as the spirit and zeal with which they contended for those liberties and rights without which it is impossible to carry on commerce to advantage. The vigorous efforts of a society of merchants attentive only to commercial objects, could not fail of diffusing new and more liberal ideas concerning justice and order in every country of Europe where they settled.

IN England, the progress of commerce was extremely slow; and the causes of this are obvious. During the Saxon heptarchy, England, split into many petty kingdoms, which were perpetually at variance with each other, exposed to the fierce incursions of the Danes, and other northern pirates, and sunk in barbarity and ignorance, was in no condition to cultivate commerce, or to pursue any system of useful and salutary policy. When a better prospect began to open by the union of the kingdom under one monarch, the Norman conquest took place. This occasioned such a violent shock, as well as such a sudden and total revolution of property, that the nation did not recover from it during

during several reigns. By the time that the constitution began to acquire some stability, and the English had so incorporated with their conquerors as to become one people, the nation engaged with no less ardour than imprudence in support of their monarch's pretensions to the crown of France, and long wasted its vigour and genius in its wild efforts to conquer that kingdom. When by ill success, and repeated disappointments, a period was at last put to this fatal frenzy, and the nation beginning to enjoy some repose, had leisure to breathe and to gather new strength, the destructive wars between the houses of York and Lancaster broke out, and involved the kingdom in the worst of all calamities. Thus, besides the common obstructions of commerce occasioned by the nature of the feudal government, and the state of manners during the middle ages, its progress in England was retarded by peculiar causes. Such a succession of events adverse to the commercial spirit was sufficient to have checked its growth, although every other circumstance had favoured it. The English were accordingly one of the last nations in Europe who availed themselves of their natural commercial advantages. Before the reign of Edward III. all the wool of England, except a small quantity wrought into coarse cloths for home consumption, was sold to the Flemings or Lombards, and manufactured by them. Though Edward, A.D. 1326, began to allure some of the Flemish weavers to settle in England, it was long before the English were ca-

pable of fabricating cloth for foreign markets, and the export of unwrought wool still continued to be the chief article of their commerce. Anderson *passim*.—All foreign commodities were brought into England by the Lombard or Hanseatick merchants. The English ports were frequented by ships both from the north and south of Europe, and they tamely allowed foreigners to reap all the profits arising from the supply of their wants. The first commercial treaty of England on record, is that with Haquin King of Norway, A. D. 1217. *Anderf.* vol. i. p. 108. But they did not venture to trade in their own ships to the Baltick until the beginning of the fourteenth century. *Ib.* 151. It was after the middle of the fifteenth, before they sent any ship into the Mediterranean. *Ib.* p. 177. Nor was it long before this period that their vessels visited the ports of Spain or Portugal. But though I have pointed out the slow progress of the English commerce as a fact little attended to, and yet meriting consideration; the concourse of foreigners to the ports of England, together with the communication among all the different countries in Europe, which went on increasing from the beginning of the twelfth century, is sufficient to justify all the observations and reasonings in the text concerning the influence of commerce on the state of manners, and of society.

NOTE XXXI. SECT. III. p. 183. [HH].

I HAVE not been able to discover the precise manner in which the Justiza was appointed. Among  
the

the claims of the *junta* or *union* formed against James I. A. D. 1264, this was one; that the King should not nominate any person to be Justiza, without the consent or approbation of the ricos-hombres or nobles. Zurita Anales de Aragon, vol. i. p. 180. But the King in his answer to their remonstrance asserts, "that it was established by immemorial practice, and was conformable to the laws of the kingdom, that the King, in virtue of his royal prerogative, should name the Justiza." Zurita, Ibid. 181. Blanca, 656. From another passage in Zurita, it appears, that while the Aragonese enjoyed the privilege of *the union*, i. e. the power of confederating against their sovereign as often as they conceived that he had violated any of their rights and immunities, the Justiza was not only nominated by the King, but held his office during the King's pleasure. Nor was this practice attended with any bad effects, as the privilege of the union was a sufficient and effectual check to any abuse of the royal prerogative. But when the privilege of the union was abolished as dangerous to the order and peace of society, it was agreed that the Justiza should continue in office during life. Several Kings, however, attempted to remove the Justizas who were obnoxious to them, and they sometimes succeeded in the attempt. In order to guard against this encroachment, which would have destroyed the intention of the institution, and have rendered the Justiza the dependant and tool of the crown, instead of the guardian



dian of the people, a law was enacted in the Cortes, A. D. 1442, ordaining that the Justiza should continue in office during life, and should not be removed from it unless by the authority of the Cortes. *Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Arag.* lib. i. p. 22. By former laws the person of the Justiza had been declared sacred, and he was responsible only to the Cortes. *Ibid.* p. 15, b. Zurita and Blanca, who both published their histories while the Justiza of Aragon retained the full exercise of his privileges and jurisdiction, have neglected to explain several circumstances with regard to the office of that respectable magistrate, because they addressed their works to their countrymen, who were well acquainted with every particular concerning the functions of a judge, to whom they looked up as to the guardian of their liberties. It is vain to consult the later historians of Spain, about any point, with respect to which the excellent historians whom I have named are silent. The ancient constitution of their country was overturned, and despotism established on the ruin of its liberties, when the writers of this and the preceding century composed their histories, and on that account they had little curiosity to know the nature of those institutions to which their ancestors owed the enjoyment of freedom, or they were afraid to describe them with much accuracy. The spirit with which Mariana, his continuator Miniana, and Ferreras, write their histories, is very different from that of the two historians of Aragon, from whom  
I have



I have taken my account of the constitution of that kingdom.

Two circumstances concerning the Justiza, besides those which I have mentioned in the text, are worthy of observation, 1. None of the ricos-hombres, or noblemen of the first order, could be appointed Justiza. He was taken out of the second class or cavalleros, who answer nearly to gentlemen or commoners in Great Britain. *Fueros & Observanc. del Reyno, &c. lib. i. p. 21, b.* The reason was, By the laws of Aragon, the ricos-hombres were not subject to capital punishment; but as it was necessary for the security of liberty, that the Justiza should be accountable for the manner in which he executed the high trust reposed in him, it was a powerful restraint upon him to know that he was liable to be punished with the utmost rigour. *Blanca, p. 657. 756. Zurita, tom. ii. 229. Fueros & Observanc. lib. ix. p. 182, b. 183.* It appears too from many passages in Zurita, that the Justiza was appointed to check the domineering and oppressive spirit of the nobles, as well as to set bounds to the power of the monarch, and therefore he was chosen from an order of citizens equally interested in opposing both.

2. A MAGISTRATE possessed of such vast powers as the Justiza, might have exercised them in a manner pernicious to the state, if he himself had been subject to no controul. A constitutional  
remedy,

remedy, however, was provided against this danger. Seventeen persons were chosen by lot in each meeting of the Cortes. These formed a tribunal called the court of inquisition into the office of Justiza. This court met at three stated terms in each year. Every person had liberty of complaining to it of any iniquity or neglect of duty in the Justiza, or in the inferior judges, who acted in his name. The Justiza and his deputies were called to answer for their conduct. The members of the court passed sentence by ballot. They might punish by degradation, confiscation of goods, or even with death. The law which erected this court, and regulated the form of its procedure, was enacted, A. D. 1461. Zurita Anales, iv. 102. Blanca Comment. Rer. Aragon. 770. Previous to this period, inquiry was made into the conduct of the Justiza, though not with the same formality. He was from the first institution of the office subject to the review of the Cortes. The constant dread of such an impartial and severe inquiry into his behaviour, was a powerful motive to the vigilant and faithful discharge of his duty. A remarkable instance of the authority of the Justiza when opposed to that of the King, occurs in the year 1386. By the constitution of Aragon, the eldest son or heir apparent of the crown possessed considerable power and jurisdiction in the kingdom. Fueros & Observan. del Reyno de Arag. lib. i. p. 16. Peter IV. instigated by a second wife, attempted to deprive his son of this, and enjoined his subjects to yield him no obedience,

dience. The Prince immediately applied to the Justiza; "the safe guard and defence, says Zurita, against all violence and oppression." The Justiza granted him the *firmitud de derecho*, the effect of which was, that upon his giving surety to appear in judgment, he could not be deprived of any immunity or privilege which he possessed, but in consequence of a legal trial before the Justiza, and of a sentence pronounced by him. This was published throughout the kingdom, and notwithstanding the proclamation in contradiction to this which had been issued by the King, the Prince continued in the exercise of all his rights, and his authority was universally recognized. Zurita *Anales de Aragon*, tom. ii. 385.

NOTE XXXII. SECT. III. p. 184. [II].

I HAVE been induced, by the concurring testimony of many respectable authors, to mention this as the constitutional form of the oath of allegiance, which the Aragonese swore to their Sovereigns. I must acknowledge, however, that I have not found this singular oath in any Spanish author whom I have had an opportunity to consult. It is mentioned neither by Zurita, nor Blanca, nor Argensola, nor Sayas, who were all historiographers appointed by the Cortes of Aragon to record the transactions of the kingdom. All these writers possess a merit, which is very rare among historians. They are extremely accurate in tracing the progress of the laws and constitution

tion of their country. Their silence with respect to this, creates some suspicion concerning the genuineness of the oath. But as it is mentioned by so many authors, who produce the ancient Spanish words in which it is expressed, it is probable that they have taken it from some writer of credit, whose works have not fallen into my hands. The spirit of the oath is perfectly agreeable to the genius of the Aragonese constitution. Since the publication of the first edition, the learned M. Totze, Professor of History at Batzow in the Dutchy of Mecklenburgh, has been so good as to point out to me a Spanish author of great authority, who has published the words of this oath. It is Antonio Perez, a native of Aragon, secretary to Philip II. The words of the oath are, “ Nos, que valemos tanto como vos, os hacemos nuestro Rey y Señor, con tal que nos guardeys nuestros fueros, y libertades, y si No, No.” *Las Obras y Relaciones de Ant. Perez.* 8vo. par Juan de la Planche 1631. p. 143.

THE privilege of Union, which I have mentioned in the preceding note, and alluded to in the next, is indeed one of the most singular which could take place in a regular government, and the oath that I have mentioned expresses nothing more than this constitutional privilege entitled the Aragonese to perform. If the King or his ministers violated any of the laws or immunities of the Aragonese, and did not grant immediate redress in consequence of their representations and remonstrances,

remonstrances, the nobles of the first rank, or *Ricos-hombres de natura, & de mesnada*, the equestrian order, or the nobility of the second class, called *Hidalgos & Infanciones*, together with the magistrates of cities, might, either in the Cortes, or in a voluntary assembly, join in union, and binding themselves by mutual oaths and the exchange of hostages to be faithful to each other, they might require the King, in the name and by the authority of his body corporate, to grant them redress. If the King refused to comply with their request, or took arms in order to oppose them, they might in virtue of the privilege of union, instantly withdraw their allegiance from the King, refuse to acknowledge him as their Sovereign, and proceed to elect another monarch; nor did they incur any guilt, or become liable to any prosecution on that account. Blanca Com. Rer. Arag. 661. 669. This union did not resemble the confederacies in other feudal kingdoms. It was a constitutional association, which pretended to legal privileges, which issued its mandates under a common seal, and proceeded in all its operations by regular and ascertained forms. This dangerous right was not only claimed, but exercised. In the year 1287, the Aragonese formed an union in opposition to Alfonso III. and obliged that King not only to comply with their demands, but to ratify a privilege so fatal to the power of the crown. Zurita Anales, tom. i. p. 322. In the year 1347, an union was formed against Peter IV. with equal success,

success, and a new ratification of the privilege was extorted. Zurita, tom. ii. p. 202. But soon after, the King having defeated the leaders of the union in battle, the privilege of union was finally abrogated in the Cortes, and all the laws or records which contained any confirmation of it, were cancelled or destroyed. The King, in presence of the Cortes, called for the act whereby he had ratified the union, and having wounded his hand with his poniard, he held it above the record, "that privilege, says he, which has been "so fatal to the kingdom, and so injurious to "royalty, should be effaced with the blood of a "King." Zurita, tom. ii. p. 229. The law abolishing the union is published. *Fueros & Observanc. lib. ix. p. 178.* From that period the Justiza became the constitutional guardian of publick liberty, and his power and jurisdiction occasioned none of those violent convulsions which the tumultuary privilege of the union was apt to produce. The constitution of Aragon, however, still remained extremely free. One source of this liberty was from the early admission of the representatives of cities into the Cortes. It seems probable, from Zurita, that burgessees were constituent members of the Cortes from its first institution. He mentions a meeting of Cortes, A. D. 1133, in which the *procuradores de las ciudades y villas* were present. Tom. i. p. 51. This is the constitutional language in which their presence is declared in the Cortes, after the journals of that court were

were regularly kept. It is probable, that an historian so accurate as Zurita, would not have used these words, if he had not taken them from some authentick record. It was more than a century after this period before the representatives of cities formed a constituent part in the supreme assemblies of the other European nations. The free spirit of the Aragonese government is conspicuous in many particulars. The Cortes not only opposed the attempts of their Kings to increase their revenue, or to extend their prerogative, but they claimed rights and exercised powers which will appear extraordinary even in a country accustomed to the enjoyment of liberty. In the year 1286, the Cortes claimed the privilege of naming the members of the King's council and the officers of his household, and they seem to have obtained it for some time. Zurita, tom. i. p. 303. 307. It was the privilege of the Cortes to name the officers who commanded the troops raised by their authority. This seems to be evident from a passage in Zurita. When the Cortes, in the year 1503, raised a body of troops to be employed in Italy, it passed an act empowering the King to name the officers who should command them. Zurita, tom. v. p. 274; which plainly implies that without this warrant, it did not belong to him in virtue of his prerogative. In the *Fueros & Observancias del Reyno de Aragon*, two general declarations of the rights and privileges of the Aragonese are published; the one in the reign of Pedro I. A. D. 1283, the other in that of James II. A. D. 1325.



They are of such length, that I cannot insert them, but it is evident from these, that not only the privileges of the nobility, but the rights of the people, personal as well as political, were, at that period, more extensive, and better understood than in any kingdom in Europe. Lib. i. p. 7. 9. The oath by which the King bound himself to observe those rights and liberties of the people, was very solemn. Ibid. p. 14, b. & p. 15. The Cortes of Aragon discovered not only the jealousy and vigilance, which are peculiar to free states, in guarding the essential parts of the constitution, but they were scrupulously attentive to observe the most minute forms and ceremonies to which they were accustomed. According to the established laws and customs of Aragon, no foreigner had liberty to enter the hall in which the Cortes assembled. Ferdinand, in the year 1481, appointed his Queen, Isabella, regent of the kingdom, while he was absent during the course of the campaign. The law required that a regent should take the oath of fidelity in presence of the Cortes; but as Isabella was a foreigner, before she could be admitted, the Cortes thought it necessary to pass an act authorizing the serjeant-porter to open the door of the hall, and to allow her to enter; "so attentive were they, says Zurita, to observe "their laws and forms, even such as may seem "most minute." Tom. iv. p. 313.

THE Aragoneses were no less solicitous to secure the personal rights of individuals, than to maintain

tain the freedom of the constitution; and the spirit of their statutes with respect to both was equally liberal. Two facts relative to this matter merit observation. By an express statute in the year 1335, it was declared to be unlawful to put any native Aragonese to the torture. If he could not be convicted by the testimony of witnesses, he was instantly absolved. Zurita, tom. ii. p. 66. Zurita records the regulation with the satisfaction natural to an historian, when he contemplates the humanity of his countrymen. He compares the laws of Aragon to those of Rome, as both exempted citizens and freemen from such ignominious and cruel treatment, and had recourse to it only in the trial of slaves. Zurita had reason to bestow such an encomium on the laws of his country. Torture was at that time permitted by the laws of every other nation in Europe. Even in England, from which the mild spirit of legislation has long banished it, torture was not, at that time, unknown. Observations on the Statutes, chiefly the more ancient, &c. p. 66.

THE other fact shows, that the same spirit which influenced the legislature prevailed among the people. In the year 1485, the religious zeal of Ferdinand and Isabella prompted them to introduce the inquisition into Aragon. Though the Aragonese were no less superstitiously attached than the other Spaniards to the Roman Catholick faith, and no less desirous to root out the seeds

of error and of heresy which the Jews and Moors had scattered, yet they took arms against the inquisitors, murdered the chief inquisitor, and long opposed the establishment of that tribunal. The reason which they gave for their conduct was, That the mode of trial in the inquisition was inconsistent with liberty. The criminal was not confronted with the witnesses, he was not acquainted with what they deposed against him, he was subjected to torture, and the goods of persons condemned were confiscated. Zurita Anales, tom. iv. p. 341.

THE form of government in the kingdom of Valencia, and principality of Catalonia, which were annexed to the crown of Aragon, was likewise extremely favourable to liberty. The Valencians enjoyed the privilege of *union* in the same manner with the Aragoneses. But they had no magistrate resembling the Justiza. The Catalonians were no less jealous of their liberties than the two other nations, and no less bold in asserting them. But it is not necessary for illustrating the following history to enter into any farther detail concerning the peculiarities in the constitution of these kingdoms.

NOTE XXXIII. SECT. III. p. 185. [KK].

I HAVE searched in vain among the historians of Castile for such information as might enable me to trace the progress of laws and government in

in Castile, or to explain the nature of the constitution with the same degree of accuracy wherewith I have described the political state of Aragon. It is manifest not only from the historians of Castile, but from its ancient laws, particularly the *Fuero Juzgo*, that its monarchs were originally elective. *Ley 2. 5. 8.* They were chosen by the bishops, the nobility, and the people, *ibid.* It appears from the same venerable code of laws, that the prerogative of the Castilian monarchs was extremely limited. *Villaldiego*, in his commentary on these laws, produces many facts and authorities in confirmation of both these particulars. *Dr. Geddes*, who was well acquainted with Spanish literature, complains that he could find no author, who gave a distinct account of the Cortes or supreme assembly of the nation, or who described the manner in which it was held, or mentioned the precise number of members who had a right to sit in it. He produces, however, from *Gil Gonzales d'Avila*, who published a history of *Henry II.* the writ of summons to the town of *Abula*, requiring it to chuse representatives to appear in the Cortes which he called to meet A. D. 1390. From this we learn, that Prelates, Dukes, Marquisses, the masters of the three military orders, *Condes* and *Riccos-hombres* were required to attend. These composed the bodies of ecclesiasticks and nobles, which formed two members of the legislature. The cities which sent members to that meeting of the Cortes were forty eight. The number of representatives (for the cities had

right to chuse more or fewer according to their respective dignity) amounted to an hundred and twenty-five. Geddes' Miscellaneous Tracts, vol. i. 331. Zurita having occasion to mention the Cortes which Ferdinand held at Toro A. D. 1505, in order to secure to himself the government of Castile after the death of Isabella, records, with his usual accuracy, the names of the members present, and of the cities which they represented. From that list it appears, that only eighteen cities had deputies in this assembly. Anales de Aragon, tom. vi. p. 3. What was the occasion of this great difference in the number of cities represented in these two meetings of the Cortes, I am unable to explain.

NOTE XXXIV. SECT. III. p. 187. [LL].

A GREAT part of the territory in Spain was engrossed by the nobility. L. Marinæus Siculus, who composed his treatise *De Rebus Hispaniæ* during the reign of Charles V. gives a catalogue of the Spanish nobility, together with the yearly rent of their estates. According to his account, which he affirms was as accurate as the nature of the subject would admit, the sum total of the annual revenue of their lands amounted to one million four hundred and eighty two thousand ducats. If we make allowance for the vast difference in the value of money in the fifteenth century from that which it now bears, and consider that the catalogue of Marinæus includes only the *Titulados*, or nobility

nobility whose families were distinguished by some honorary title, their wealth must appear very great. L. Marinæus ap. Schotti Scriptores Hispan. vol. i. p. 323. The Commons of Castile, in their contests with the crown, which I shall hereafter relate, complain of the extensive property of the nobility as extremely pernicious to the kingdom. In one of their manifestoes they assert that from Valladolid to St. Jago in Galicia, which was an hundred leagues, the crown did not possess more than three villages. All the rest belonged to the nobility, and could be subjected to no publick burden. Sandov. Vida del Emperor. Carl. V. vol. i. p. 422. It appears from the testimony of authors quoted by Bovadilla, that these vast possessions were bestowed upon the *Ricos-hombres*, *bidalgos*, and *cavalleros* by the Kings of Castile, in reward for the assistance which they had received from them in expelling the Moors. They likewise obtained by the same means a considerable influence in the cities, many of which anciently depended upon the nobility. Politica para Corregidores. Amb. 1750. fol. vol. i. 440. 442.

NOTE XXXV. SECT. III. p. 190. [MM].

I HAVE been able to discover nothing certain as I observed Note XVIII. with respect to the origin of communities or free cities in Spain. It is probable, that as soon as the considerable towns were recovered from the Moors, the inhabitants who fixed their residence in them, being persons of dis-

tion and credit, had all the privileges of municipal government and jurisdiction conferred upon them. Many striking proofs occur of the splendour, wealth and power of the Spanish cities. Hieronymos Paulus wrote a description of Barcelona in the year 1491, and compares the dimensions of the town to that of Naples, and the elegance of its buildings, the variety of its manufactures, and the extent of its commerce, to Florence. Hieron. Paulus ap. Schottum Script. Hisp. ii. 844. Marinæus describes Toledo as a large and populous city. A great number of its inhabitants were persons of quality and of illustrious rank. Its commerce was great. It applied particularly to the manufactures of silk and wool; and the number of inhabitants employed in these two branches of trade, amounted nearly to ten thousand. Marin. ubi supr. p. 308. I know no city, says he, that I would prefer to Valladolid for elegance and splendour. Ibid. p. 312. We may form some estimate of its populousness from the following circumstances. The citizens having taken arms in the year 1516, in order to oppose a measure concerted by cardinal Ximenes, they mustered in the city, and in the territory which belonged to it, thirty thousand fighting men. Sandov. Vida del Emper. Carl. V. tom. i. p. 81. The manufactures carried on in the towns of Spain were not intended merely for home consumption, they were exported to foreign countries, and their commerce was a considerable source of wealth to the inhabitants. The maritime laws of Barcelona are the foundation of mercantile jurisprudence



jurisprudence in modern times, as the *Leges Rhodiæ* were among the ancients. All the commercial states in Italy adopted these laws, and regulated their trade according to them. *Sandi Storia Civile Veneziani*, vol. ii. 865. It appears from several ordonnances of the Kings of France, that the merchants of Aragon and Castile were received on the same footing, and admitted to the same privileges with those of Italy. *Ordonances des Roys*, &c. tom. ii. p. 135. iii. 166. 504. 635. Cities in such a flourishing state became a respectable part of the society, and were entitled to a considerable share in the legislature. The magistrates of Barcelona aspired to the highest honour a Spanish subject can enjoy, that of being covered in the presence of their sovereign, and of being treated as *grandees* of the kingdom. *Origin de la dignidad de Grande de Castilla por don Alonso Carillo*. Madr. 1657. p. 18.

NOTE XXXVI. SECT. III. p. 193. [NN].

THE military order of St. Jago, the most honourable and opulent of the three Spanish orders, was instituted about the year 1170. The bull of confirmation by Alexander III. is dated A. D. 1176. At that time a considerable part of Spain was subject to the Moors, and the whole country much exposed to the depredations not only of the enemy, but of banditti. It is no wonder, then, that an institution, the object of which was to oppose the enemies of the Christian faith, and to restrain

restrain and punish those who disturbed the public peace, should be extremely popular, and meet with general encouragement. The wealth and power of the order became so great, that one historian says, that the Grand Master of St. Jago was the person in Spain of greatest power and dignity next to the King. *Æl. Anton. Nebriffensis*, ap. *Schott. Scrip. Hisp.* i. 812. Another observes, that the order possessed every thing in Castile that a King would most desire to obtain. *Zurita Anales*, v. 22. The knights took the vows of obedience, of poverty, and of conjugal chastity. By the former they were bound implicitly to obey the commands of their grand master. The order could bring into the field a thousand men at arms. *Æl. Ant. Nebref.* p. 813. If these men at arms were accompanied, as was usual in that age, this was a formidable body of cavalry. There belonged to this order eighty-four commanderies, and two hundred priories and other benefices. *Dissertations sur la Chevalerie par Hon. de St. Marie*, p. 262. It is easy to see how formidable to his sovereign the command of these troops, the administration of such revenues, and the disposal of so many offices, must have rendered a subject. The other two orders, though inferior to that of St. Jago in power and wealth, were nevertheless very considerable. When the conquest of Granada deprived the knights of St. Jago of those enemies against whom their zeal was originally directed, superstition found out a new object, in  
defence

defence of which they engaged to employ their courage. To their usual oath, they added the following clause; "We do swear to believe, to maintain, and to contend in publick and in private, that the Virgin Mary, the mother of God, our Lady, was conceived without the stain of original sin." This singular addition was made about the middle of the seventeenth century. Honoré de St. Marie *Dissertations*, &c. p. 263.—This singular engagement is not peculiar to the order of St. Jago. The members of the second military order in Spain, that of Calatrava, equally zealous to employ their prowess in defence of the honours of the Blessed Virgin, have likewise professed themselves her true knights. Their vow, conceived in terms more theologically accurate than that of St. Jago, may afford some amusement to an English reader. "I vow to God, to the Grand Master, and to you who here represent his person, that now, and for ever, I will maintain and contend, that the Virgin Mary, Mother of God, our Lady, was conceived without original sin, and never incurred the pollution of it; but that in the moment of her happy conception, and of the union of her soul with her body, the Divine Grace prevented and preserved her from original guilt, by the merits of the passion and death of Christ our Redeemer, her future son, foreseen in the Divine Council, by which she was truly redeemed, and by a more noble kind of redemption than any of the children of Adam. In the belief

belief of this truth, and in maintaining the honour of the most Holy Virgin, through the strength of Almighty God, I will live and die." *Definiciones de la Orden de Calatrava, conforme al Capitulo General en 1652, fol. Madr. 1748. p. 153.* Though the church of Rome hath prudently avoided to give its sanction to the doctrine of the immaculate conception, and the two great monastick orders of St. Dominic and St. Francis have espoused opposite opinions concerning it, the Spaniards are such ardent champions for the honour of the Virgin, that when the present King of Spain instituted a new military order in the year 1771, in commemoration of the birth of his grandson, he put it under the immediate protection of the most Holy Mary in the mystery of her immaculate conception. *Constitutiones de la Real y distinguida Orden. Española de Carlos III. p. 7.* As this zeal for the honour of the Virgin has some resemblance to that species of refined gallantry, which was the original object of chivalry, one sees a reason for its being adopted by the military orders, while the spirit of chivalry retained some vigour. But in the present age, it must excite some surprize to see the institution of an illustrious order connected with a doctrine so extravagant and destitute of foundation.

NOTE XXXVII. SECT. III. p. 196. [OO].

I HAVE frequently had occasion to take notice of the defects in police during the middle ages, occasioned by the feebleness of government, and the  
the

the want of proper subordination among the different ranks of men. I have observed in a former Note, that this greatly interrupted the intercourse between nations, and even between different places in the same kingdom. The description which the Spanish historians give of the frequency of rapine, murder, and every act of violence, in all the provinces of Spain, are amazing, and present to us the idea of a society but little removed from the disorder and turbulence of that which has been called a state of nature. Zurita Anales de Arag. i. 175. *Æl. Ant. Nebrissensis rer. a Ferdin. gestar. Hist.* ap. Schottum, II. 849. Though the excess of these disorders rendered the institution of the *Santa Hermandad* necessary, great care was taken at first to avoid giving any offence or alarm to the nobility. The jurisdiction of the judges of the *Hermidad* was expressly confined to crimes which violated the publick peace. All other offences were left to the cognizance of the ordinary judges. If a person was guilty of the most notorious perjury, in any trial before a judge of the *Hermidad*, he could not punish him, but was obliged to remit the case to the ordinary judge of the place. *Commentaria in Regias Hispan. Constitut. per Alph. de Azevedo*, pars v. p. 220, &c. fol. Duaci, 1612. Notwithstanding these restrictions, the barons were sensible how much the *Hermidad* would encroach on their jurisdiction. In Castile, some opposition was made to the institution; but Ferdinand had the address to obtain the consent of the Constable to the introduction

duction of the Hermandad into that part of the kingdom where his estate lay ; and by that means, as well as the popularity of the institution, he surmounted every obstacle that stood in its way. *Æl. Ant. Nebrissen. 851.* In Aragon, the nobles combined against it with greater spirit ; and Ferdinand, though he supported it with vigour, was obliged to make some concessions in order to reconcile them. *Zurita Anales de Arag. iv. 356.* The power and revenue of the Hermandad in Castile seems to have been very great. Ferdinand, when preparing for the war against the Moors of Granada, required of the Hermandad to furnish him sixteen thousand beasts of burden, together with eight thousand men to conduct them, and he obtained what he demanded. *Æl. Ant. Nebriff. 881.* The Hermandad has been found to be of so much use in preserving peace, and restraining or detecting crimes, that it is still continued in Spain ; but as it is no longer necessary either for moderating the power of the nobility, or extending that of the crown, the vigour and authority of the institution diminishes gradually.

NOTE XXXVIII. SECT. III. p. 199. [PP].

NOTHING is more common among Antiquaries, and there is not a more copious source of error, than to decide concerning the institutions and manners of past ages, by the forms and ideas which prevail in their own times. The French lawyers in

in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, having found their sovereigns in possession of absolute power, seem to think it a duty incumbent on them, to maintain that such unbounded authority belonged to the crown in every period of their monarchy. "The government of France," says M. de Real very gravely, "is purely monarchical at this day, as it was from the beginning. Our Kings were absolute originally as they are at present." *Science du Gouvernement*, tom. ii. p. 31. It is impossible, however, to conceive two states of civil society more unlike to each other, than that of the French nation under Clovis, and that under Louis XV. It is evident from the codes of laws of the various tribes which settled in Gaul and the countries adjacent to it, as well as from the history of Gregory of Tours, and other early annalists, that among all these people the form of government was extremely rude and simple, and that they had scarcely begun to acquire the first rudiments of that order and police which are necessary in extensive societies. The King or leader had the command of soldiers or companions, who followed his standard from choice, not by constraint. I have produced the clearest evidence of this, Note VI. An event related by Gregory of Tours, lib. iv. c. 14. affords the most striking proof of the dependence of the early French Kings on the sentiments and inclination of their people. Clotaire I. having marched at the head of his army, in the year 553, against the Saxons, that people, intimidated



dated at his approach, sued for peace, and offered to pay a large sum to the offended monarch. Clo-taire was willing to close with what they proposed. But his army insisted to be led forth to battle. The King employed all his eloquence to persuade them to accept of what the Saxons were ready to pay. The Saxons, in order to sooth them, increased their original offer. The King renewed his solicitations: But the army enraged, rushed upon the King, tore his tent in pieces, dragged him out of it, and would have slain him on the spot, if he had not consented to lead them instantly against the enemy.

IF the early monarchs of France possessed such limited authority, even while at the head of their army, their prerogative during peace will be found to be still more confined. They ascended the throne not by any hereditary right, but in consequence of the election of their subjects. In order to avoid an unnecessary number of quotations, I refer my readers to Hottomanni *Franco-gallia*, cap. vi. p. 47. edit. 1573, where they will find the fullest proof of this from Gregory of Tours, Amoinus, and the most authentick historians of the Merovingian Kings. The effect of this election was not to invest them with absolute power. Whatever related to the general welfare of the nation, was submitted to publick deliberation, and determined by the suffrage of the people, in the annual assemblies called *Les Champs de Mars* and *Les Champs de Mai*.

Mai. These assemblies were called *Champs*, because, according to the custom of all the barbarous nations, they were held in the open air, in some plain capable of containing the vast number of persons who had a right to be present. Jo. Jac. Sorberus de Comitibus veterum Germanorum, vol. i. § 19, &c. They were denominated *Champs de Mars* and *de Mai*, from the months in which they were held. Every freeman seems to have had a right to be present in these assemblies. Sorberus, *ibid.* § 132, &c. The ancient annals of the Franks describe the persons who were present in the assembly held A. D. 788, in these words: In placito Ingelheimensi conveniunt pontifices, majores, minores, sacerdotes, reguli, duces, comites, præfecti, cives, oppidani, Apud Sorber. § 304. There every thing that concerned the happiness of their country, says an ancient historian, every thing that could be of benefit to the Franks, was considered and enjoined. Fredegarius ap. Du Cange Glossar. voc. *Campus Martii*. Chlotharius II. describes the business, and acknowledges the authority of these assemblies. They are called, says he, that whatever relates to the common safety may be considered and resolved by common deliberation; and whatever they determine, to that I will conform. Amoinus de Gest. Franc. lib. iv. c. i. ap. Bouquet Recueil, iii. 116. The statutory clauses, or words of legislative authority in the decrees issued in these assemblies, run not in the name of the King alone. “We have treated, says Childebert, in a decree,

A. D. 532, in the assembly of March, together with our Nobles, concerning some affairs, and we now publish the conclusion, that it may come to the knowledge of all." Childeb. Decret. ap. Bouquet Recueil des Histor. tom. iv. p. 3. We have agreed together with our vassals. Ibid. § 2. It is agreed in the assembly in which we were all united. Ibid. § 4. The Salic laws, the most venerable monument of French jurisprudence, were enacted in the same manner. *Dictaverunt Salicam legem proceres ipsius gentis, qui tunc temporis apud eam erant Rectores. Sunt autem electi de pluribus viri quatuor—qui per tres Mallos convenientes, omnes causarum origines sollicité discurrendo, tractantes de singulis judicium decreverunt hoc modo.* Præf. Leg. Salic. ap. Bouquet. Ibid. p. 122. *Hoc decretum est apud regem & principes ejus, & apud cunctum populum christianum, qui infra regnum Merwingorum consistunt.* Ibid. p. 124. Nay, even in their charters, the Kings of the first race are careful to specify that they were granted with the consent of their vassals. *Ego Childebertus Rex unà cum consensu & voluntate Francorum, &c.* A. D. 558. Bouquet, ibid. 622. *Chlotharius III. unà cum patribus nostris episcopis, optimatibus, cæterisque palatii nostri ministris,* A. D. 664. Ibid. 648. *De consensu fidelium nostrorum.* Mably Observ. tom. i. p. 239. The historians likewise describe the functions of the King in the national assemblies in such terms as imply that his authority there was extremely small, and  
that

that every thing depended on the court itself. Ipse Rex (says the authors of *Annales Francorum*, speaking of the Field of March) *sedebat in sella regia, circumstante exercitu, præcipiebatque is, die illo, quicquid a Francis decretum erat.* Bouquet *Recueil*, tom. ii. p. 647.

THAT the general assemblies exercised supreme jurisdiction over all persons, and with respect to all causes, is so evident as to stand in need of no proof. The trial of Brunehaut, A. D. 613, how unjust soever the sentence against her may be, as related by Fredegarius, *Chron. cap. 42.* Bouquet, *ibid.* 430. is in itself sufficient proof of this. The notorious violence and iniquity of the sentence, serve to demonstrate the extent of jurisdiction which this assembly possessed, as a Prince so sanguinary as Clothaire II. thought the sanction of its authority would be sufficient to justify his rigorous treatment of the mother and grandmother of so many Kings.

WITH respect to conferring donatives on the Prince, we may observe, that among nations whose manners and political institutions are simple, the publick, as well as individuals, having few wants, they are unacquainted with taxes, and free uncivilized tribes disdain to submit to any stated imposition. This was remarkably the case of the Germans, and of all the various people that issued from that country. Tacitus pronounces two tribes not to be of German origin, because they submit-

ted to pay taxes. *De Morib. Germ.* c. 43. And speaking of another tribe according to the ideas prevalent in Germany, he says, "they were not degraded by the imposition of taxes." *Ibid.* c. 29. Upon their settlement in Gaul, we may conclude, that while elated with the consciousness of victory, they would not renounce the high-spirited ideas of their ancestors, or voluntarily submit to a burden which they regarded as a badge of servitude. The evidence of the earliest records and historians justify this conclusion. M. de Montesquieu, in the twelfth and subsequent chapters of the thirteenth book of *l'Esprit des Loix*, and M. de Mably *Observat. sur l'Hist. de France*, tom. i. p. 247. have investigated this fact with great attention, and have proved clearly that the property of freemen among the Franks was not subject to any stated tax. That the state required nothing from persons of this rank but military service at their own expence, and that they should entertain the King in their houses when he was upon any progress through his dominions, or his officers when sent on any publick employment, furnishing them with carriages and horses. Monarchs subsisted almost entirely upon the revenues of their own domains, and upon the perquisites arising from the administration of justice, together with a few small fines and forfeitures exacted from such as had been guilty of certain trespasses. It is foreign from my subject to enumerate these. The reader may find them in *Observat. de M. de Mably*, vol. i. p. 267.

WHEN

WHEN any extraordinary aid was granted by free-men to their sovereign, it was purely voluntary. In the annual assembly of March or May, it was the custom to make the King a present of money, of horses or arms, or of some other thing of value. This was an ancient custom, and derived from their ancestors the Germans. *Mos est civitatibus, ultro ac viritim conferri principibus vel armentorum vel frugum, quod pro honore acceptum, etiam necessitatibus subvenit.* Tacit de Mor. Germ. c. 15. These gifts, if we may form a judgment concerning them from the general terms in which they are mentioned by the ancient historians, were considerable, and made no small part of the royal revenue. Many passages to this purpose are produced by M. Du Cange, *Differt. iv. sur Joinville, 153.* Sometimes a conquered people specified the gift which they bound themselves to pay annually, and it was exacted as a debt if they failed. *Annales Metenses, ap. Du Cange, ibid. p. 155.* It is probable that the first step towards taxation was to ascertain the value of these gifts which were originally gratuitous, and to compel the people to pay the sum at which they were rated. Still, however, some memory of their original was preserved, and the aids granted to monarchs in all the kingdoms of Europe were termed benevolences or free gifts.

THE Kings of the second race in France were raised to the throne by the election of the people. Pepinus Rex pius, says an author who wrote a few

years after the transaction which he records, per auctoritatem Pápæ, & unctiōnem sancti chrismatis & electionem omnium Francorum in regni solio sublimatus est. Clausula de Pepini consecratione ap. Bouq. Recueil des Histor. tom. v. p. 9. At the same time, as the chief men of the nation had transferred the crown from one family to another, an oath was exacted of them, that they should maintain on the throne the family which they had now promoted; ut nunquam de alterius lumbis regem in ævo præsumant eligere. Ibid. p. 10. This oath the nation faithfully observed during a considerable space of time. The posterity of Pepin kept possession of the throne; but with respect to the manner of dividing their dominions among their children, Princes were obliged to consult the general assembly of the nation. Thus Pepin himself, A. D. 768, appointed his two sons, Charles and Carlomannus, to reign as joint sovereigns; but he did this, unà cum consensu Francorum & procerum suorum seu & episcoporum, before whom he laid the matter in their general assembly. Conventus apud sanctum Dionysium, Capitular. vol. i. p. 187. This destination the French confirmed in a subsequent assembly, which was called upon the death of Pepin; for, as Eginhart relates, they not only appointed them Kings, but by their authority they regulated the limits of their respective territories. Vita Car. Magni ap. Bouquet Recueil, tom. v. p. 90. In the same manner, it was by the authority of the supreme assemblies that any dispute which arose among the descendants of the royal



royal family was determined. Charlemagne recognizes this important part of their jurisdiction, and confirms it in his charter concerning the partition of his dominions ; for he appoints, that, in case of any uncertainty with respect to the right of the several competitors, he whom the people shall chuse, shall succeed to the crown. Capitular. vol. i. 442.

UNDER the second race of Kings, the assembly of the nation, distinguished by the name of *Conventus*, *Malli*, *Placita*, were regularly assembled once a year at least, and frequently twice in the year. One of the most valuable monuments of the history of France is the treatise of Hincmarus, archbishop of Rheims, *de ordine Palatii*. He died A. D. 882. only sixty-eight years after Charlemagne, and he relates in that short discourse the facts which were communicated to him by Adalhardus, a minister and confidant of Charlemagne. From him we learn that this great monarch never failed to hold the general assembly of his subjects every year. *In quo placito generalitas universorum majorum tam clericorum quam laicorum conveniebat*. Hincm. oper. edit. Sirmondi, vol. ii. c. 29. 211. In these assemblies, matters which related to the general safety and state of the kingdom were always discussed, before they entered upon any private or less important business. Ibid. c. 33. p. 213. His immediate successors imitated his example, and transacted no affair of importance without the advice of their great council.

UNDER the second race of Kings, the genius of the French government continued to be in a good measure democratical. The nobles, the dignified ecclesiasticks, and the great officers of the crown, were not the only members of the national council; the people, or the whole body of free-men, either in person or by their representatives, had a right to be present in it. Hincmarus, in describing the manner of holding the general assemblies, says, that if the weather was favourable, they met in the open air, but if otherwise, they had different apartments allotted to them, so that the dignified clergy were separated from the laity, and the *comites vel hujusmodi principes sibimet honorificabiliter a cætera multitudine segregarentur*. Ibid. c. 35. p. 114. Agobardus, archbishop of Lyons, thus describes a national council in the year 833, wherein he was present. *Qui ubique conventus exitit ex reverendissimis episcopis, & magnificentissimis viris inlustribus, collegio quoque abbatum & comitum, promiscuæque ætatis & dignitatis populo*. The *cætera multitudo* of Hincmarus is the same with the *populus* of Agobardus, and both describe the inferior order of free-men, the same who were afterwards known in France by the name of the third estate, and in England by the name of commons. The people, as well as the members of higher dignity, were admitted to a share of the legislative power. Thus, by a law, A. D. 803, it is ordained, "that the question shall be put to the people with respect to every new law, and if they shall agree to it, they shall confirm

confirm it by their signature." Capit. vol. i. 394. There are two capitularia which convey to us a full idea of the part which the people had in the administration of government. When they felt the weight of any grievance, they had a right to petition the sovereign for redress. One of these petitions, in which they desire that ecclesiasticks might be exempted from bearing arms, and from serving in person against the enemy, is still extant. It is addressed to Charlemagne, A. D. 803, and expressed in such terms as could have been used only by men conscious of liberty, and of the extensive privileges which they possessed. They conclude with requiring him to grant their demand, if he wished that they should any longer continue faithful subjects to him. That great monarch, instead of being offended or surprised at the boldness of their petition, received it in a most gracious manner, and signified his willingness to comply with it. But sensible that he himself did not possess legislative authority, he promises to lay the matter before the next general assembly, that such things as were of common concern to all might be there considered and established by common consent. Capit. tom. i. p. 405—409. As the people by their petitions brought matters to be proposed in the general assembly, we learn from another capitulare the form in which they were approved there, and enacted as laws. The propositions were read aloud, and then the people were required to declare whether they assented to them or not. They signified their assent by crying  
three

three times, "We are satisfied," and then the capitulare was confirmed by the subscription of the monarch, the clergy, and the chief men of the laity. Capitul. tom. i. p. 627. A. D. 822. It seems probable from a capitulare of Carolus Calvus, A. D. 851, that the sovereign could not refuse his assent to what was proposed and established by his subjects in the general assembly. Tit. ix. § 6. Capitul. vol. ii. p. 47. It is unnecessary to multiply quotations concerning the legislative power of the national assembly of France under the second race, or concerning its right to determine with regard to peace and war. The uniform style of the Capitularia is an abundant confirmation of the former. The reader who desires any farther information with respect to the latter, may consult *Les Origines ou l'Ancien Gouvernement de la France*, &c. tom. iii. p. 87, &c. What has been said with respect to the admission of the people or their representatives into the supreme assembly merits attention, not only in tracing the progress of the French government, but on account of the light which it throws upon a similar question agitated in England, concerning the time when the commons became part of the legislative body in that kingdom.

NOTE XXXIX. SECT. III. p. 201. [QQ].

THAT important change which the constitution of France underwent, when the legislative power was transferred from the great council of the nation

nation to the King, has been explained by the French antiquaries with less care, than they bestow in illustrating other events in their history. For that reason I have endeavoured with greater attention to trace the steps which led to this memorable revolution. I shall here add some particulars which tend further to illustrate it. The *Legis Salicæ*, the *Leges Burgundionum*, and other codes published by the several tribes which settled in Gaul, were general laws extending to every person, to every province and district where their authority was acknowledged. But they seem to have become obsolete; and the reason of their falling into disuse is very obvious. Almost the whole property of the nation was allodial when these laws were framed. But when the feudal institutions became general, and gave rise to an infinite variety of questions peculiar to that species of tenure, the ancient codes were of no use in deciding with regard to these, because they could not contain regulations applicable to cases which did not exist at the time when they were compiled. This considerable change in the nature of property made it necessary to publish the new regulations contained in the *Capitularia*. Many of these, as is evident from the perusal of them, were publick laws extending to the whole French nation, in the general assembly of which they were enacted. The weakness of the greater part of the monarchs of the second race, and the disorder into which the nation was thrown by the depredations of the Normans, encouraged the barons to usurp an independent

dependent power formerly unknown in France. The nature and extent of that jurisdiction which they assumed, I have formerly considered. The political union of the kingdom was at an end, its ancient constitution was dissolved, and only a feudal relation subsisted between the King and his vassals. The regal jurisdiction extended no further than the domains of the crown. Under the last Kings of the second race, these were reduced almost to nothing. Under the first Kings of the third race, they comprehended little more than the patrimonial estate of Hugh Capet, which he annexed to the crown. Even with this accession, they continued to be very narrow. Velly, *Hist. de France*, tom. iii. p. 32. Many of the most considerable provinces in France did not at first acknowledge Hugh Capet as a lawful Monarch. There are still extant several charters, granted during the first years of his reign, with this remarkable clause in the form of dating the charter; “*Deo regnante, rege expectante,*” *regnante domino nostro Jesu Christo, Francis autem contra jus regnum usurpante Ugone rege.* Bouquet *Recueil*, tom. x. p. 544. A Monarch whose title was thus openly disputed, was not in a condition to assert the royal jurisdiction, or to limit that of the barons.

ALL these circumstances rendered it easy for the barons to usurp the rights of royalty within their own territories. The capitularia became no less obsolete than the ancient laws; local customs were

were every where introduced, and became the sole rule by which all civil transactions were conducted, and all causes were tried. The wonderful ignorance, which became general in France during the ninth and tenth centuries, contributed to the introduction of customary law. Few persons, except ecclesiasticks, could read; and as it was not in the power of such illiterate persons to have recourse to written laws, either as their guide in business, or their rule in administering justice, the customary law universally prevailed.

DURING this period, the general assembly of the nation seems not to have been called, nor to have once exerted its legislative authority. Local customs regulated and decided every thing. A striking proof of this occurs in tracing the progress of the French jurisprudence. The last of the Capitularia collected by M. Baluze, was issued in the year 921, by Charles the Simple. An hundred and thirty years elapsed from that period to the publication of the first ordinance of the Kings of the third race, contained in the great collection of M. Lauriere, and the first ordinance which appears to be an act of legislation extending to the whole kingdom, is that of Philip Augustus, A. D. 1150. Ordon. tom. i. p. 1, 18. During that long period of one hundred and sixty-nine years, all transactions were directed by local customs, and no addition was made to the statutory law of France. The ordinances, previous to the reign of Philip Augustus, contain regulations,  
the



the authority of which did not extend beyond the King's domains.

VARIOUS instances occur of the caution with which the Kings of France ventured at first to exercise legislative authority. M. l'Ab. de Mably produces an ordonnance of Philip Augustus, A. D. 1206, concerning the Jews, who, in that age, were in some measure the property of the lord in whose territories they resided. But it is not so much an act of royal power, as a treaty of the King with the countess of Champagne, and the comte de Dampierre; and the regulations in it seem to be established not by his authority, but by their consent. *Observat. sur l'hist. de France*, ii. p. 355. In the same manner an ordonnance of Louis VIII. concerning the Jews, A. D. 1223, is a contract between the King and his nobles, with respect to their manner of treating that unhappy race of men. *Ordon. tom. i. p. 47.* The *Etablissements* of St. Louis, though well adapted to serve as general laws to the whole kingdom, were not published as such, but only as a complete code of customary law, to be of authority within the King's domains. The wisdom, the equity, and the order conspicuous in that code of St. Louis, procured it a favourable reception throughout the kingdom. The veneration due to the virtues and good intentions of its author, contributed not a little to reconcile the nation to that legislative authority, which the King began to assume. Soon after his time, the idea of the King's possessing

supreme legislative power became common. If, says Beaumanoir, the King makes any establishment specially for his own domain, the barons may nevertheless adhere to their ancient customs; but if the establishment be general, it shall be current throughout the whole kingdom, and we ought to believe that such establishments are made with mature deliberation, and for the general good. *Cout. de Beauvoisis*, c. 48. p. 265. Though the Kings of the third race did not call the general assembly of the nation, during the long period from Hugh Capet to Philip the Fair, yet they seem to have consulted the bishops and barons who happened to be present in their court, with respect to any new law which they published. Examples of this occur *Ordon. tom. i. p. 3 & 5*. The practice seems to have continued as late as the reign of St. Louis, when the legislative authority of the crown was well established. *Ordon. tom. i. p. 58. A.D. 1246*. This attention paid to the barons facilitated the Kings acquiring such full possession of the legislative power, as enabled them afterwards to exercise it without observing that formality.

THE assemblies distinguished by the name of the States General, were first called A.D. 1302, and were held occasionally from that period to the year 1614, since which time they have not been summoned. These were very different from the ancient assemblies of the French nation under the Kings of the first and second race. There is

no point with respect to which the French antiquaries are more generally agreed, than in maintaining that the States General had no suffrage in the passing of laws, and possessed no proper legislative jurisdiction. The whole tenor of the French history confirms this opinion. The form of proceeding in the States General was this. The King addressed himself to the whole body assembled in one place, and laid before them the affairs on account of which he had summoned them. The deputies of each of the three orders, of nobles, of clergy, and of the third estate, met apart, and prepared their *cabier* or memorial, containing their answer to the propositions which had been made to them, together with the representations which they thought proper to lay before the King. These answers and representations were considered by the King in his council, and generally gave rise to an ordonnance. These ordinances were not addressed to the three estates in common. Sometimes the King addressed an ordonnance to each of the estates in particular. Sometimes he mentioned the assembly of the three estates. Sometimes mention is made only of the assembly of that estate to which the ordonnance is addressed. Sometimes no mention at all is made of the assembly of estates, which suggested the propriety of enacting the law. Preface au tom. iii. des Ordon. p. xx. Thus the States General had only the privilege of advising and remonstrating; the legislative authority resided in the King alone.

## NOTE XL. SECT. III. p. 206. [RR].

IF the parliament of Paris be considered only as the supreme court of justice, every thing relative to its origin and jurisdiction is clear and obvious. It is the ancient court of the King's palace, new-modelled, rendered sedentary, and invested with an extensive and ascertained jurisdiction. The power of this court, while employed in this part of its functions, is not the object of present consideration. The pretensions of the parliament to controul the exercise of the legislative authority, and its claim of a right to interpose with respect to publick affairs and the political administration of the kingdom, lead to inquiries attended with great difficulty. As the officers and members of the parliament of Paris were anciently nominated by the King, were paid by him, and on several occasions were removed by him at pleasure, (*Chronic. Scandaleuse de Louis XI. chez les Mem. de Comines, tom. ii. p. 51. Edit. de M. Lenglet de Frefnoy*) they cannot be considered as representatives of the people, nor could they claim any share in the legislative power as acting in their name. We must search for some other source of this high privilege. The parliament was originally composed of the most eminent persons in the kingdom. The peers of France, ecclesiasticks of the highest order, and noblemen of illustrious birth were members of it, to whom were added some clerks and counsellors learned in

the laws. Pasquier Recherches, p. 44, &c. Encyclopedie, tom. xii. Art. *Parlement*. p. 3, 5. A court thus constituted was properly a committee of the States General of the kingdom, and was composed of those barons and *fideles*, whom the Kings of France were accustomed to consult with regard to every act of jurisdiction or legislative authority. It was natural therefore, during the intervals between the meetings of the States General, or during those periods when that assembly was not called, to consult the parliament, to lay matters of publick concern before it, and to obtain its approbation and concurrence, before any ordonance was published, to which the people were required to conform. 2. Under the second race of Kings, every new law was reduced into proper form by the Chancellor of the kingdom, was proposed by him to the people, and when enacted, was committed to him to be kept among the publick records, that he might give authentick copies of it to all who should demand them. Hincm. de ord. palat. c. 16. Capitul. Car. Calv. tit. xiv. § 11. tit. xxxiii. The chancellor presided in the parliament of Paris at its first institution. Encyclopedie, tom. iii. art. *Chancelier*, p. 88. It was therefore natural for the King to continue to employ him in his ancient functions of framing, taking into his custody, and publishing the ordonances which were issued. To an ancient copy of the Capitularia of Charlemagne, the following words are subjoined; Anno tertio clementissimi domini nostri Caroli Augusti, sub ipso anno, hæc

facta Capitula sunt, & consignata Stephano comiti, ut hæc manifesta faceret Parisiis mallo publico, & illa legere faceret coram Scabineis, quod ita & fecit, & omnes in uno consenserunt, quod ipsi voluissent observare usque in posterum, etiam omnes Scabinei, Episcopi, Abbates, Comites, manu propria subter signaverunt. Bouquet Recueil, tom. v. p. 663. *Mallus* signifies not only the publick assembly of the nation, but the court of justice held by the comes, or missus dominicus. Scabini were the judges, or the assessors of the judges in that court. Here then seems to be a very early instance, not only of laws being published in a court of justice, but of their being verified or confirmed by the subscription of the judges. If this was the common practice, it naturally introduced the verifying of edicts in the parliament of Paris. But this conjecture I propose with that diffidence, which I have felt in all my reasonings concerning the laws and institutions of foreign nations. 3. This supreme court of justice in France was dignified with the appellation of parliament, the name by which the general assembly of the nation was distinguished towards the close of the second race of Kings; and men, both in reasoning and in conduct, are wonderfully influenced by the similarity of names. The preserving the ancient names of the magistrates established while republican government subsisted in Rome, enabled Augustus and his successors to assume new powers, with less observation, and greater ease. The bestowing the same name in France upon two

courts, which were extremely different, contributed not a little to confound their jurisdiction and functions.

ALL these circumstances concurred in leading the Kings of France to avail themselves of the parliament of Paris, as the instrument of reconciling the people to their exercise of legislative authority. The French, accustomed to see all new laws examined and authorised before they were published, did not sufficiently distinguish between the effect of performing this in the national assembly, or in a court appointed by the King. But as that court was composed of respectable members, and well skilled in the laws of their country, when any new edict received its sanction, that was sufficient to dispose the people to implicit submission.

WHEN the practice of *verifying* and *registering* the royal edicts in the parliament of Paris became common, the parliament contended that this was necessary in order to give them legal authority. It was established as a fundamental maxim in French jurisprudence, that no law could be published in any other manner; that, without this formality, no edict or ordonnance could have any effect; that the people were not bound to obey it, and ought not to consider it as an edict or ordonnance until it was verified in the supreme court, after free deliberation. Roche-flavin des Parlemens de France, 4to. Gen. 1621. p. 921. The parliament, at different times, hath with great fortitude and integrity op-  
posed



posed the will of their sovereigns; and notwithstanding their repeated and peremptory requisitions and commands, hath refused to verify and publish such edicts as it conceived to be oppressive to the people, or subversive of the constitution of the kingdom. Roche-flavin reckons, that between the year 1562, and the year 1589, the parliament refused to verify more than a hundred edicts of the Kings. Ibid. 925. Many instances of the spirit and constancy with which the parliaments of France opposed pernicious laws, and asserted their own privileges, are enumerated by Limnæus *Notitiæ Regni Franciæ*, lib. i. c. 9. p. 224.

BUT the power of the parliament to maintain and defend this privilege, bore no proportion to its importance, or to the courage with which the members asserted it. When any monarch was determined that an edict should be carried into execution, and found the parliament inflexibly resolved not to verify or publish it, he could easily supply this defect by the plenitude of his regal power. He repaired to the parliament in person, he took possession of his seat of justice, and commanded the edict to be read, verified, registered, and published in his presence. Then, according to another maxim of French law, the King himself being present, neither the parliament, nor any magistrate whatever, can exercise any authority, or perform any function. *Adveniente Principe, cessat magistratus*. Roche-flavin, *ibid.* p. 928, 929. *Encyclopedie*, tom. ix. *Art. Lit. de Justice*, p. 581.

Roche-flavin mentions several instances of Kings who actually exerted this prerogative, so fatal to the residue of the rights and liberties transmitted to the French by their ancestors. Pasquier produces some instances of the same kind. Rech. p. 61. Limnæus enumerates many others, which the length to which this note has swelled, prevents me from inserting at length, though they tend greatly to illustrate this important article in the French history, p. 245. Thus by an exertion of prerogative, which, though violent, seems to be constitutional, and is justified by innumerable precedents, all the efforts of the parliament to limit and controul the King's legislative authority, are rendered ineffectual.

I HAVE not attempted to explain the constitution or jurisdiction of any parliament in France, but that of Paris. All of them are formed upon the model of that most ancient and respectable tribunal, and all my observations concerning it will apply with full force to them.

#### NOTE XLI. SECT. III. p. 211. [SS].

THE humiliating posture, in which a great Emperor implored absolution, is an event so singular, that the words in which Gregory himself describes it, merit a place here, and convey a striking picture of the arrogance of that Pontiff. *Per triduum, ante portam castrî, deposito omni regio cultu, miserabiliter, utpote discalceatus, & laneis indutus, persistens,*

persistens, non prius cum multo fletu apostolicæ miserationis auxilium, & consolationem implorari destitit, quam omnes qui ibi aderant, & ad quos rumor ille pervenit, ad tantam pietatem, & compassionis misericordiam movit, ut pro eo multis precibus & lacrymis intercedentes, omnes quidem insolitam nostræ mentis duritiem mirarentur; nonnulli vero in nobis non apostolicæ sedis gravitatem, sed quasi tyrannicæ feritatis crudelitatem esse clamarent. *Epist. Gregor. ap. Memorie della Contessa Matilda da Fran. Mar. Fiorentini. Lucca, 1756. vol. i. p. 174.*

NOTE XLII. SECT. III. p. 222. [TT].

As I have endeavoured in the history to trace the various steps in the progress of the constitution of the Empire, and to explain the peculiarities in its policy very fully, it is not necessary to add much by way of illustration. What appears to be of any importance, I shall range under distinct heads.

1. WITH respect to the power, jurisdiction and revenue of the Emperors. A very just idea of these may be formed by attending to the view which Pfeffel gives of the rights of the Emperors at two different periods. The first at the close of the Saxon race, A. D. 1024. These, according to his enumeration, were the right of conferring all the great ecclesiastical benefices in Germany; of receiving the revenues of them during a vacancy;

of Mort-main, or of succeeding to the effects of ecclesiasticks who died intestate. The right of confirming or of annulling the elections of the Popes. The right of assembling councils, and of appointing them to decide concerning the affairs of the church. The right of conferring the title of King upon their vassals. The right of granting vacant fiefs. The right of receiving the revenues of the Empire, whether arising from the Imperial domains, from imposts and tolls, from gold or silver mines, from the taxes paid by the Jews, or from forfeitures. The right of governing Italy as its proper sovereigns. The right of erecting free cities, and of establishing fairs in them. The right of assembling the diets of the Empire, and of fixing the time of their duration. The right of coining money, and of conferring that privilege on the states of the Empire. The right of administering both high and low justice within the territories of the different states. Abregé, p. 160. The other period is at the extinction, of the Emperors of the Families of Luxemburg and Bavaria, A. D. 1437. According to the same author, the Imperial prerogatives at that time were the right of conferring all dignities and titles, except the privilege of being a state of the Empire. The right of *Preces primariæ*, or of appointing once during their reign a dignitary in each chapter or religious house. The right of granting dispensations with respect to the age of majority. The right of erecting cities, and of conferring the privilege of coining money. The right of calling the meetings of the diet,

diet, and of presiding in them. Abregé, &c. p. 507. It were easy to show that Mr. Pfeffel is well founded in all these assertions, and to confirm them by the testimony of the most respectable authors. In the one period, the Emperors appear as mighty sovereigns with extensive prerogatives; in the other, as the heads of a confederacy with very limited powers.

THE revenues of the Emperors decreased still more than their authority. The early Emperors, and particularly those of the Saxon line, besides their vast patrimonial or hereditary territories, possessed an extensive domain both in Italy and Germany which belonged to them as Emperors. Italy belonged to the Emperors as their proper kingdom, and the revenues which they drew from it were very considerable. The first alienations of the Imperial revenue were made in this country. The Italian cities having acquired wealth, and aspiring at independence, purchased their liberty from different Emperors, as I have observed Note XV. The sums which they paid, and the Emperors with whom they concluded these bargains, are mentioned by Casp. Klockius de *Ærario Norimb.* 1671. p. 85, &c. Charles IV. and his son Wenceslaus, dissipated all that remained of the Italian branch of the domain. The German domain lay chiefly upon the banks of the Rhine, and was under the government of the Counts Palatine. It is not easy to mark out the boundaries, or to estimate the value of this ancient domain, which  
has

has been so long incorporated with the territories of different Princes. Some hints with respect to it may be found in the glossary of Speideliuſ, which he has intitled *Speculum Juridico-Philologico-politico Historicum Obſervationum*, &c. Norimb. 1673. vol. i. 679. 1045. a more full account of it is given by Klockiuſ de *Ærario*, p. 84. Beſides this, the Emperors poſſeſſed conſiderable diſtricts of land lying intermixed with the eſtates of the Dukes and barons. They were accuſtomed to viſit theſe frequently, and drew from them what was ſufficient to ſupport their court during the time of their reſidence. *Annaliſtæ. ap. Struv. tom. i. 611.* A great part of theſe were ſeized by the nobles during the long interregnum, or during the wars occaſioned by the conteſts between the Emperors and the court of Rome. At the ſame time that ſuch encroachments were made on the fixed or territorial property of the Emperors, they were robbed almoſt entirely of their caſual revenues. The Princes and barons appropriating to themſelves taxes and duties of every kind, which had uſually been paid to them. *Pfeffel Abregé, p. 374.* The profuſe and inconfiderate ambition of Charles IV. ſquandered whatever remained of the Imperial revenues after ſo many defalcations. He, in the year 1376, in order to prevail with the Electors to chuſe his ſon Wenceſlaus King of the Romans, promiſed each of them a hundred thouſand crowns. But being unable to pay ſo large a ſum, and eager to ſecure the election to his ſon, he alienated to the three eccleſiaſtical Electors, and to the Count Palatine,



Palatine, such countries as still belonged to the Imperial domain on the banks of the Rhine, and likewise made over to them all the taxes and tolls then levied by the Emperors in that district. Triethemius, and the author of the Chronicle of Magdeburgh, enumerate the territories and taxes which were thus alienated, and represent this as the last and fatal blow to the Imperial authority. Struv. Corp. vol. i. p. 437. From that period, the shreds of the ancient revenues possessed by the Emperors have been so inconsiderable, that, in the opinion of Speideliuſ, all that they yield would be ſo far from defraying the expence of ſupporting their houſehold, that they would not pay the charge of maintaining the poſts eſtabliſhed in the Empire. Speideliuſ Speculum, &c. vol. i. p. 680. Theſe funds, inconsiderable as they were, continued to decreaſe. Granvelle, the miniſter of Charles V. aſſerted in the year 1546, in preſence of ſeveral of the German Princes, that his maſter drew no money at all from the Empire. Sleid. Hiſtory of the Reformation, Lond. 1689. p. 372. The ſame is the caſe at preſent. *Traité de droit Publique de l'Empire* par M. le Coq de Villeray, p. 55. From the reign of Charles IV. whom Maximilian called the peſt of the Empire, the Emperors have depended entirely on their hereditary dominions, as the only ſource of their power, and even of their ſubſiſtence.

2. THE ancient mode of electing the Emperors, and the various changes which it underwent, require



require some illustration. The Imperial crown was originally attained by election, as well as those of most monarchies in Europe. An opinion long prevailed among the antiquaries and publick lawyers of Germany, that the right of chusing the Emperors was vested in the archbishops of Mentz, Cologne, and Treves, the King of Bohemia, the Duke of Saxony, the Marquis of Brandenburg, and the Count Palatine of the Rhine, by an edict of Otho III. confirmed by Gregory V. about the year 996. But the whole tenor of history contradicts this opinion. It appears, that from the earliest period in the history of Germany, the person who was to reign over all, was elected by the suffrage of all. Thus Conrad I. was elected by all the people of the Franks, say some annalists; by all the princes and chief men, say others; by all the nation, say others. See their words, Struv. Corp. 211. Conringius de German. Imper. Repub. Acroamata Sex. Ebroduni 1654. p. 103. In the year 1024, posterior to the supposed regulations of Otho III. Conrad II. was elected by all the chief men, and his election was approved and confirmed by the people, Struv. Corp. 284. At the election of Lotharius II. A. D. 1125, sixty thousand persons of all ranks were present. He was named by the chief men, and their nomination was approved by the people. Struv. *ibid.* p. 357. The first author who mentions the seven Electors is Martinus Polonus, who flourished in the reign of Frederick II. which ended A. D. 1250. We find that in all the ancient elections to which I have referred,

referred, the Princes of the greatest power and authority were allowed by their countrymen to name the person whom they wished to appoint Emperor, and the people approved or disapproved of their nomination. This privilege of voting first is called by the German lawyers the right of *Prætaxation*. Pfeffel Abregé, p. 316. This was the first origin of the exclusive right which the Electors acquired. The Electors possessed the most extensive territories of any Princes in the Empire; all the great offices of the state were in their hands by hereditary right; as soon as they obtained or engrossed so much influence in the election as to be allowed the right of prætaxation, it became unnecessary for the inferior ecclesiasticks and barons to attend, when they had no other function but that of confirming the deed of these more powerful Princes by their assent. During times of turbulence, they could not resort to the place of election without a numerous retinue of armed vassals, the expence of which they were obliged to defray out of their own revenues. The rights of the seven Electors were supported by all the descendants and allies of their powerful families, who shared in the splendor and influence which they enjoyed by this distinguishing privilege. Pfeffel Abregé, p. 376. The seven Electors were considered as the representatives of all the orders which composed the highest class of German nobility. There were three archbishops, chancellors of the three great districts into which the Empire was anciently divided; one King; one Duke; one Marquis; and one Count.

All

All these circumstances contributed to render the introduction of this considerable innovation into the constitution of the Germanick body extremely easy. Every thing of importance, relating to this branch of the political state of the Empire, is well illustrated by Onuphrius Panvinus, an Augustinian Monk of Verona, who lived in the reign of Charles V. His treatise, if we make some allowance for that partiality which he expresses in favour of the powers which the Popes claimed in the Empire, has the merit of being one of the first works in which a contraverted point in history is examined with critical precision, and with a proper attention to that evidence which is derived from records, or the testimony of contemporary historians. It is inserted by Goldastus in his *Politica Imperialia*, p. 2.

As the Electors have engrossed the sole right of chusing the Emperors, they have assumed likewise that of deposing them. This high power the Electors have not only presumed to claim, but have ventured, in more than one instance, to exercise. In the year 1298, a part of the Electors deposed Adolphus of Nassau and substituted Albert of Austria in his place. The reasons on which they found their sentence, show that this deed flowed from factious, not from publick-spirited motives. Struv. Corp. vol. i. 540. In the first year of the fifteenth century, the Electors deposed Wenceslaus, and placed the Imperial crown on the head of Rupert Elector Palatine. The act of deposition

deposition is still extant. Goldasti Constit. vol. i. 379. It is pronounced in the name and by the authority of the Electors, and confirmed by several prelates and barons of the Empire, who were present. These exertions of the electoral power demonstrate that the Imperial authority was sunk very low.

THE other privileges of the Electors, and the rights of the electoral college, are explained by the writers on the publick law in Germany.

3. WITH respect to the diets or general assemblies of the Empire, it would be necessary, if my object were to write a particular history of Germany, to enter into a minute detail, concerning the forms of assembling it, the persons who have right to be present, their division into several Colleges or Benches, the objects of their deliberation, the mode in which they carry on their debates or give their suffrages, and the authority of their decrees or recesses. But in a general history it is sufficient to observe, that, originally, the diets of the Empire were exactly the same with the assemblies of March and of May, held by the Kings of France. They met, at least, once a year. Every freeman had a right to be present. They were assemblies, in which a monarch deliberated with his subjects, concerning their common interest. Arumæus de Comitibus Rom. German. Imperii, 4to, Jenæ, 1660, cap. 7. N°. 20, &c. But when the Princes, dignified ecclesiasticks, and barons,

rons, acquired territorial and independent jurisdiction, the diet became an assembly of the separate states, which formed the confederacy of which the Emperor was head. While the constitution of the Empire remained in its primitive form, attendance on the diets was a duty, like the other services due from feudal subjects to their sovereign, which the members were bound to perform in person; and if any member who had a right to be present in the diet neglected to attend in person, he not only lost his vote, but was liable to an heavy penalty. *Arumæus de Comit. c. 5. N°. 40.* Whereas, from the time that the members of the diet became independent states, the right of suffrage was annexed to the territory or dignity, not to the person. The members, if they could not, or would not attend in person, might send their deputies, as Princes send ambassadors, and they were entitled to exercise all the rights belonging to their constituents. *Ibid. N°. 42. 46. 49.* By degrees, and upon the same principle of considering the diet as an assembly of independent states, in which each confederate had the right of suffrage, if any member possessed more than one of those states or characters which entitle to a seat in the diet, he was allowed a proportional number of suffrages. *Pfeffel Abregé, 622.* From the same cause the Imperial cities, as soon as they became free, and acquired supreme and independent jurisdiction within their own territories, were received as members of the diet. The powers of the diet extend to every thing relative to the com-  
mon

mon concern of the Germanick body, or that can interest or affect it as a confederacy. The diet takes no cognizance of the interior administration in the different states, unless that happens to disturb or threaten the general safety.

4. WITH respect to the Imperial chamber, the jurisdiction of which has been the great source of order and tranquillity in Germany, it is necessary to observe, that this court was instituted in order to put an end to the calamities occasioned by private wars in Germany. I have already traced the rise and progress of this practice, and pointed out its pernicious effects as fully as their extensive influence during the middle ages merited. In Germany, private wars seem to have been more frequent and productive of worse consequences than in the other countries of Europe. There are obvious reasons for this. The nobility of Germany were extremely numerous, and the causes of their dissention multiplied in proportion. The territorial jurisdiction which the German nobles acquired, was more complete than that possessed by their order in other nations. They became, in reality, independent powers, and they claimed all the privileges of that character. The long interregnum from A. D. 1255 to A. D. 1273, accustomed them to an uncontrouled licence, and led them to forget that subordination which is necessary in order to maintain publick tranquillity. At the time when the other monarchs of Europe

began to acquire such an increase of power and revenues, as added new force to their government, the authority and revenues of the Emperors continued gradually to decline. The diets of the Empire, which alone had authority to judge between such mighty barons, and power to enforce its decisions, met very seldom. Conring. *Acroamata*, p. 234. The diets when they did assemble were often composed of several thousand members, Chronic. Constant. ap. Struv. Corp. i. p. 546, and were mere tumultuary assemblies, ill-qualified to decide concerning any question of right. The session of the diets continued only two or three days; Pfeffel *Abregé*, p. 244, so that they had no time to hear or discuss any cause that was in the smallest degree intricate. Thus Germany was left, in some measure, without any court of judicature, capable of repressing the evils of private war.

ALL the expedients which were employed in other countries of Europe in order to restrain this practice, and which I have described Note XXI. were tried in Germany with little effect. The confederacies of the nobles and of the cities, and the division of Germany into various circles, which I mentioned in that Note, were found likewise insufficient. As a last remedy, the Germans had recourse to arbiters whom they called *Austregæ*. The barons and states in different parts of Germany joined in conventions, by which they bound themselves to refer all controversies, that might arise



arise between them, to the determination of *Aust-regæ*, and to submit to their sentences as final. These arbiters are named sometimes in the treaty of convention, an instance of which occurs in Ludewig Reliquiæ Manusc. omnis ævi, vol. ii. 212; sometimes they were chosen by mutual consent; sometimes they were appointed by neutral persons; and sometimes the choice was left to be decided by lot. Datt. de Pace publica Imperii, lib. i. cap. 27. N° 60, &c. Speidelius Speculum, &c. voc. *Austrag.* p. 95. Upon the introduction of this practice, the publick tribunals of justice became, in a great measure, useless, and were almost entirely deserted.

IN order to re-establish the authority of government, Maximilian instituted the Imperial chamber, at the period which I have mentioned. This tribunal consisted originally of a president, who was always a nobleman of the first order, and of sixteen judges. The president was appointed by the Emperor, and the judges, partly by him, and partly by the States, according to forms which it is unnecessary to describe. A sum was imposed, with their own consent, on the States of the Empire, for paying the salaries of the judges, and officers in this court. The Imperial chamber was established first at Francfort on the Maine. During the reign of Charles V. it was removed to Spire, and continued in that city above a century and a half. It is now fixed at Wetzlar. This court

takes cognizance of all questions concerning civil right between the States of the Empire, and passes judgment in the last resort, and without appeal. To it belongs, likewise, the privilege of judging in criminal causes, which may be considered as connected with the preservation of the publick peace. Pfeffel Abregé, 560.

ALL causes relating to points of feudal right or jurisdiction, together with such as respect the territories which hold of the Empire in Italy, belong properly to the jurisdiction of the Aulick council. This tribunal was formed upon the model of the ancient court of the palace instituted by the Emperors of Germany. It depended not upon the States of the Empire, but upon the Emperor; he having the right of appointing at pleasure all the judges of whom it is composed. Maximilian, in order to procure some compensation for the diminution of his authority, by the powers vested in the Imperial chamber, prevailed on the diet A. D. 1512, to give its consent to the establishment of the Aulick council. Since that time, it has been a great object of policy in the court of Vienna to extend the jurisdiction, and support the authority of the Aulick council, and to circumscribe and weaken those of the Imperial chamber. The tedious forms and dilatory proceedings of the Imperial chamber have furnished the Emperors with pretexts for doing so. *Lites Spiræ*, according to the witticism of a German lawyer, *spirant, sed nunquam*

nunquam expirant. Such delays are unavoidable in a court composed of members named by States, jealous of each other. Whereas the judges of the Aulick council, depending on one master, and being responsible to him alone, are more vigorous and decisive. Puffendorf. de Statu Imper. German. cap. v. § 20. Pfeffel Abregé, p. 581.

NOTE XLIII. SECT. III. p. 225. [UU].

THE description which I have given of the Turkish government is conformable to the accounts of the most intelligent travellers who have visited that Empire. The count de Marfigli, in his treatise concerning the military state of the Turkish Empire, ch. vi. and the Author of Observations on the religion, laws, government and manners of the Turks, published at London 1768, vol. i. p. 81. differ from other writers who have described the political constitution of that powerful monarchy. As they had opportunity, during their long residence in Turkey, to observe the order and justice conspicuous in several departments of administration, they seem unwilling to admit that it should be denominated a despotism. But when the form of government in any country is represented to be despotick, this does not suppose that the power of the monarch is continually exerted in acts of violence, injustice, and cruelty. Under governments of every species, unless when some frantick tyrant happens to hold the scepter, the

ordinary administration must be conformable to the principles of justice, and if not active in promoting the welfare of the people, cannot certainly have their destruction for its object. A state, in which the sovereign possesses the absolute command of a vast military force, together with the disposal of an extensive revenue; in which the people have no privileges, and no part either immediate or remote in legislation; in which there is no body of hereditary nobility, jealous of their own rights and distinctions, to stand as an intermediate order between the Prince and the people, cannot be distinguished by any name but that of a despotism. The restraints, however, which I have mentioned, arising from the *Capiculy*, and from religion, are powerful. But they are not such as change the nature or denomination of the government. When a despotick Prince employs an armed force to support his authority, he commits the supreme power to their hands. The Prætorian bands in Rome dethroned, murdered, and exalted Princes, in the same wanton manner with the soldiery of the Porte at Constantinople. But notwithstanding this, the Roman Emperors have been considered by all political writers as possessing despotick power.

THE Author of Observations on the religion, law, government, and manners of the Turks, in a preface to the second edition of his work, hath made some remarks on what is contained in this

Note, and that part of the text to which it refers. It is with diffidence I set my opinion in opposition to that of a person, who has observed the government of the Turks with attention, and has described it with abilities. But after a careful review of the subject, to me the Turkish government still appears of such a species, as can be ranged in no class, but that to which political writers have given the name of *despotism*. There is not in Turkey any constitutional restraint upon the will of the sovereign, or any barrier to circumscribe the exercise of his power, but the two which I have mentioned; one afforded by religion, the principle upon which the authority of the Sultan is founded; the other by the army, the instrument which he must employ to maintain his power. The Author represents the *Ulcma*, or body of the law, as an intermediate order between the monarch and the people. Pref. p. 30. But whatever restraint the authority of the *Ulcma* may impose upon the sovereign, is derived from religion. The *Moulabs*, out of whom the Mufti and other chief officers of the law must be chosen, are ecclesiasticks. It is as interpreters of the Koran or Divine Will that they are objects of veneration. The check, then, which they give to the exercise of arbitrary power is not different from one of those of which I took notice. Indeed, this restraint cannot be very considerable. The Mufti, who is the head of the order, as well as every inferior

officer of law, is named by the Sultan, and removable at pleasure. The strange means employed by the *Ulcma* in 1746, to obtain the dismissal of a minister whom they hated, is a manifest proof that they possess but little constitutional authority which can serve as a restraint upon the will of the sovereign. Observat. p. 92. of 2d edit. If the author's idea be just, it is astonishing that the *body of the law* should have no method of remonstrating against the errors of administration, but by setting fire to the capital.

THE Author seems to consider the *Capiculy*, or soldiery of the Porte, neither as formidable instruments of the Sultan's power, nor as any restraint upon the exercise of it. His reasons for this opinion are, that the number of the *Capiculy* is small in proportion to the other troops which compose the Turkish armies, and that in time of peace they are undisciplined. Pref. 2d edit. p. 23, &c. But the troops stationed in a capital, though their number be not great, are always masters of the sovereign's person and power. The prætorian bands bore no proportion to the legionary troops in the frontier provinces. The soldiery of the Porte are more numerous, and must possess the same power, and be equally formidable, sometimes to the sovereign, and oftener to the people. However much the discipline of the Janizaries may be neglected at present, it certainly

tainly was not so, in that age to which alone my description of the Turkish government applies. The Author observes, Pref. p. 29. that the Janizaries never deposed any Sultan of themselves, but that some form of law, true or false, has been observed, and that either the Mufti, or some other minister of religion, has announced to the unhappy prince the law which renders him unworthy of the throne. Observ. p. 102. This will always happen. In every revolution brought about by military power, the deeds of the soldiery must be confirmed and carried into execution with the civil and religious formalities peculiar to the constitution.

THIS addition to the Note may serve as a further illustration of my own sentiments, but is not made with any intention of entering into any controversy with the Author of *Observations*, &c. to whom I am indebted for the obliging terms in which he has expressed his remarks upon what he had advanced. Happy were it for such as venture to communicate their opinions to the world, if every animadversion upon them were conveyed with the same candid and liberal spirit: In one particular, however, he seems to have misapprehended what I meant. Pref. p. 17. I certainly did not mention his or count Marfigli's long residence in Turkey as a circumstance, which should detract from the weight of their authority. I took notice of it, in justice to my readers, that they



they might receive my opinion with distrust, as it differed from that of persons whose means of information were so far superior to mine.

NOTE XLIV. SECT. III. p. 227. [XX].

THE institution, the discipline, and privileges of the Janizaries are described by all the authors who give any account of the Turkish government. The manner in which enthusiasm was employed in order to inspire them with courage is thus related by Prince Cantemir: "When Amurath I. had formed them into a body, he sent them to Haji Bektash a Turkish Saint, famous for his miracles and prophecies, desiring him to bestow on them a banner, to pray to God for their success, and to give them a name. The Saint, when they appeared in his presence, put the sleeve of his gown upon one of their heads, and says, Let them be called *Tengicheri*. Let their countenance be ever bright, their hands victorious, their sword keen; let their spear always hang over the heads of their enemies, and wherever they go, may they return with a shining face." History of the Ottoman Empire, p. 38. The number of Janizaries, at the first institution of the body, was not considerable. Under Solyman, in the year 1521, they amounted to twelve thousand. Since that time their number has greatly increased, Marfigli, Etat. &c. ch. 16. p. 68. Though Solyman possessed such abilities and authority as to restrain this formidable

midable body within the bounds of obedience, yet its tendency to limit the power of the Sultans was, even in that age, foreseen by sagacious observers. Nicolas Daulphinois, who accompanied M. D'Aramon ambassador from Henry II. of France to Solyman, published an account of his travels, in which he describes and celebrates the discipline of the Janizaries, but at the same time predicts that they would, one day, become formidable to their masters, and act the same part at Constantinople, as the Prætorian bands had done at Rome. Collection of Voyages from the Earl of Oxford's Library, vol. i. p. 599.

## NOTE XLV. SECT. III. p. 229. [YY].

SOLYMAN the Magnificent, to whom the Turkish historians have given the surname of *Canuni*, or instituter of rules, first brought the finances and military establishment of the Turkish Empire into a regular form. He divided the military force into the *Capiculy* or soldiery of the Porte, which was properly the standing army, and *Serrataculy* or soldiers appointed to guard the frontiers. The chief strength of the latter consisted of those who held Timariots and Ziams. These were portions of land granted to certain persons for life, in much the same manner as the military fiefs among the nations of Europe, in return for which military service was performed. Solyman, in his *Canun-Namé* or book of regulations, fixed with  
great

great accuracy the extent of these lands in each province of his Empire, appointed the precise number of soldiers each person who held a Timariot or a Ziam should bring into the field, and established the pay which they should receive while engaged in service. Count Marsigli and Sir Paul Rycaut have given extracts from this book of regulations, and it appears, that the ordinary establishment of the Turkish army exceeded an hundred and fifty thousand men. When these were added to the soldiery of the Porte, they formed a military power greatly superior to what any Christian state could command. Marsigli *Etat Militaire*, &c. p. 136. Rycaut's state of the Ottoman Empire, book iii. ch. 2. As Solyman, during his active reign, was engaged so constantly in war, that his troops were always in the field, the *Serrataculy* became almost equal to the Janizaries themselves in discipline and valour.

It is not surprising, then, that the authors of the sixteenth century should represent the Turks as far superior to the Christians, both in the knowledge and in the practice of the art of war. Guicciardini informs us, that the Italians learned the art of fortifying towns from the Turks. *Histor. lib. xv. p. 266.* Busbequius, who was ambassador from Ferdinand to Solyman, and who had opportunity to observe the state both of the Christian and Turkish armies, published a discourse concerning the best manner of carrying on war  
against